

SALVATION THROUGH SELF-DISCIPLINE

By the same author

FUNDAMENTALS OF JAINISM

THE ENLIGHTENED VISION OF THE SELF *SVARUPA SAMBODHANA* OF
AKALANKA (EDITOR)

SPIRITUAL ENLIGHTENMENT *PARAMATMA PRAKASHI* BY
YOGINDU DEVA
(EDITOR)

SPIRITUAL INSIGHTS *ISHTOPADESH AND SAMADHI SHATAK* BY
PUJYAPADA (EDITOR)

THE ART AND SCIENCE OF SELF-REALIZATION
PURUSHARTHA SIDDHYUPAYA OF AMRTACHANDRA

THE RELIGION OF MAN *RATNA KARANADA SHRAVAKACHARA*
OF SAMANTABHADRA

THE SPECTRUM OF CONSCIOUSNESS *PRAVACHANASARA* OF
KUNDAKUNDA (EDITOR)

SALVATION THROUGH SELF-DISCIPLINE

Niyamsara of Kundakunda

Translated with an Introduction by
Jagdish Prasad Jain "Sadhak"
President, Jain Mission



RADIANT PUBLISHERS

Copyright 2005 by Radiant Publishers

All rights reserved No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording, or otherwise, without the prior permission of the Publishers

ISBN 81-7027-242-4

Published by
RADIANT PUBLISHERS
E-155 Kalkaji, New Delhi-110019

Printed at
Tarun Offset Printers, Delhi.

Dedicated to the memory of



Seth Nem Chand ji Jain Johri
(1911—1982)

Contents

PREFACE	ix
CONTENTS OF INTRODUCTION	
1 INTRODUCTION	1
A GENERAL APPRECIATION OF KUNDAKUNDA, 1	
Kundakunda's Works, 4	
<i>NIYAMSARA</i> , 4	
Commentary on <i>Niyamsara</i> , 5	
The concept of <i>nyam</i> , 7	
<i>Moksha-marg</i> , 8	
<i>Samyaktva</i> , 9	
<i>Upayoga</i> , 11	
<i>Jnana upayoga</i> , 11	
<i>Darshan upayoga</i> , 12	
Evolvent nature of the self and matter, 12	
Interaction between self and matter, 13	
<i>Upadana</i> and <i>namita karana</i> , 13	
Concept of <i>sva-pari-apeksa</i> , 14	
Self-referential and other referential viewpoints, 16	
NON-NATURAL MODIFICATIONS 18	
<i>DRAVYA</i> (MATERIAL) AND <i>BHAVA</i> (PSYCHIC) KARMA, 23	
<i>Jna</i> (self) and <i>ajna</i> (non-self), 26	
<i>Tattvasthanas</i> or substances, 26	

- Impurities of the self, 27
- ETHICO-SPIRITUAL OR AXIOLOGICAL VIEWPOINTS, 27
 - Confusion regarding ethico-spiritual viewpoints, 32
 - Niyamas* clarifies various viewpoints, 33
 - Axiological and ontological viewpoints, 33
 - Heya* (rejectable) and *upadeya* (worth realizing), 36
- WHY JIVA, ETC. TATTVAS INCLUDING MOKSHA ARE SAID TO BE EXTERNAL AND HEYA? 39
 - Pure Self is free from *karma-upadhi*, 45
 - Various psychic dispositions (*bhavas*), 46
 - Reasons for laying emphasis on intrinsic purity, 47
- PATH TO SALVATION, 50
- SAMYAK-DARSHAN (ENLIGHTENED VIEW), 52
- ENLIGHTENED KNOWLEDGE, 54
- VYAVAHARA CHARITRA, 56
 - Five vows (*vratas*), 57
 - Five carefulness (*samiti*), 60
 - Three restraints (*gupti*), 61
 - Five most revered souls (*pancha parameshthi*), 64
 - Vyavahara charitra* is also *tapas-charan*, 69
 - Uniqueness of Kundakunda's *vyavahara* conduct, 70
- NECESSITY OF BOTH VYAVAHARA AND NISHCHAYA CHARITRA, 71
- NISCHAYA CHARITRA, 75
 - Pratikraman*, 76
 - Pratyakhyan*, 79
 - Soham*, 80
 - Alachara*, 85
 - Prayashchitta*, 86
 - Kayotsarg*, 87
 - Param samadhi*, 88
 - Param bhakti*, 89
 - Aushyakas*, 94
 - Three kinds of self, 96
 - Independence and self-reliance, 97
- SHUDDHA UPAYOGA, 98
 - The concept of *sarvagata* (omniscience), 100
 - Complementarity of different viewpoints, 104
 - Intrinsic purity of the self, 106
- PATH OF SALVATION, 108

Meaning of Salvation, 109	
DIFFERENT CONCEPTIONS OF SALVATION, 109	
Sāṃkhya and Advaita Vedānta, 110	
The Buddhist conception, 111	
The Jaina concept, 111	
VARIOUS PATHS OF SALVATION, 112	
<i>Bhakti mārg</i> , 113	
<i>Jñāna mārg</i> , 113	
<i>Karma mārg</i> , 115	
Self as its own friend and foe, 117	
Vedanāta and the love of others, 119	
<i>Karma yoga</i> in its true sense, 121	
Validity of three separate paths of salvation?, 123	
MISUNDERSTANDINGS IN REGARD TO <i>NIYAMSARA</i> AND	
KUNDAKUNDA, 130	
Meaning of <i>śramana</i> , 130	
BALANCE BETWEEN EXCESSIVE FORMALISATION AND EXCESSIVE	
INTERIORISATION, 131	
BIFURCATION OF MORAL DISCIPLINE INTO TWO CATEGORIES, 135	
RELEVANCE OF <i>NISHCHAYA CHARITRA</i> FOR HOUSEHOLDERS, 137	
KUNDAKUNDA'S DATE, 138	
REPLACEMENT OF KUNDAKUNDA BY PUSHPADANTA, 139	
SELF-REFORMATION A DIFFICULT TASK, 141	
KUNDAKUNDA AN ORIGINAL THINKER, 142	
CONCLUSION, 144	
NOTES, 147	
2 SUMMARY AND REMARKS ON <i>NIYAMSARA</i>	154
BY A N UPADHYE	
3 <i>NIYAMSARA</i> : TEXT AND COMMENTARY	157
4 <i>NIYAMSARA</i> IN PRAKRIT	186
INDEX OF <i>NIYAMSARA</i> GATHAS	204
INDEX OF <i>SAMAYASARA</i> GATHAS	206
INDEX	207

Contents

NIYAMSARA: TEXT AND COMMENTARY

1	SELF (<i>JIVA</i>)	157
2	NON-SELF (<i>AJIVA</i>)	162
3	PURE THOUGHTS OR CONTEMPLATIONS (<i>SHUDDHA BHAVA</i>)	166
4	<i>VYAVAHARA CHARITRA</i>	169
5	REPENTANCE (<i>PRATIKRAMAN</i>)	172
6	RENUNCIATION (<i>PRATYAKHYAN</i>)	174
7	CONFESSION (<i>ALOCHANA</i>)	176
8	EXPIATION (<i>PRAYASCHITTA</i>)	177
9	EQUANIMITY (<i>SAMADHI</i>)	178
10	ENLIGHTENED DEVOTION (<i>BHAKTI</i>)	179
11	ESSENTIAL INDEPENDENT, SELF-DISCIPLINARY ACTIVITIES (<i>AVASHYAKAS</i>)	180
12	CONSCIOUS ATTENTIVENESS OF THE SOUL (<i>UPAYOGA</i>)	182

Preface

Mahavira proclaimed in India the message of salvation, that religion is a reality and not a mere social convention. Salvation comes from taking refuge in the true religion and not from observing external ceremonies. Wondrous to relate, this teaching overcame the barriers of the race's abiding instinct and conquered the whole country

-- Rabindranath Tagore

This work is named *Nryamsara* because it deals with *sara* (the essence, true or right) of *nyam* (rule or law), i.e. the true, essential and indispensable rules of self-discipline for attaining the highest objective of human endeavour, i.e. salvation. This is an outstanding work of great significance. In this work, "*nyam*" is defined as the path of liberation comprising of enlightened world-view (*samyak-darshan*), enlightened knowledge (*samyak-jnana*) and enlightened conduct (*samyak-charitra*), which necessarily (*nyamena*) leads to peace, happiness, social well-being and salvation (NS, 4). Acharya Kundakunda, the author of this work, explains that these three jewels are aspects of consciousness and emphasizes that the state of supreme or pure self can be attained by following a regime of self-control, righteousness, detachment, self-reliance and self-discipline, involving self-introspection, self-analysis, self-criticism, etc. The constant and sincere

practice of these methods of self-discipline enables us to realize the true nature (*svabhāva*) of the self by ridding it of its impurities, both external and internal distortions (*ubhaya*) of attachment, aversion and passions, etc

While in general, three of Kundakunda's works, viz *Panchastikaya*, *Pravachanasara* and *Samayasara* are often given much prominence, *Niyamsara* is, nonetheless, a unique spiritual treatise and a very significant work. The commentator of *Niyamsara* has characterised this work as "*bhagavata shastra*" (a treatise dealing with supreme soul, i.e. the innate nature of pure self, representing "*shabda brahma*" (*paramatman* or supreme soul in words), which leads to supreme happiness ("*pramananada pradani*"), eternal happiness ("*shashvat-sukh*") and liberation (*moksha*) (commentary on NS, 187) and to the status of "*param Brahma*" (supreme soul or *paramatman*) (verse 301 by commentator)

Niyamsara deals with the path of liberation, which is the means of attaining Godhood or salvation (*param naruana*) (NS, 4). It is composed by Kundakunda on the basis of the teachings of *Jina* (conquerors of internal defects, weaknesses and limitations) for the use of his own contemplation (*nij-bhavana namatta*), with a view to remove all inconsistencies, misunderstandings and shortcomings that may be apparent [in earlier works] (*purva para dosha uruketa*) (NS, 187)

Since *Niyamsara* lays great emphasis on the fact that salvation, the highest goal of human endeavour, can be attained by placing primary reliance on self-discipline, this work is entitled *Salvation Through Self-Discipline*. It defines the three ethico-spiritual viewpoints, which occupy a very significant place in Kundakunda's works, especially *Niyamsara* and *Samayasara*, in the most precise manner and in most clear terms. Of the three ethico-spiritual standpoints (*nayas*), *nishchaya* and *vyaakhana* *nayas* are the means, while *shuddha naya*, which represents the supreme state of pure, perfect self, is the end or objective to be realised. They, thus, help to clear the confusion that is often caused in the minds of people, including scholars of high repute, about these *nayas*.

Niyamsara seems to have been authored by Kundakunda after he had written *Panchastikaya*, *Samayasara* and *Pravachanasara*. It merely refers, at many places, to various concepts without explaining them

presumably because they have been discussed and dealt with in his earlier works. It contains a summation of Kundakunda's teachings in brief and clarifies several issues. A careful study of *Niyamsara* reveals that it contains several original and novel ideas and a number of significant concepts, which makes it a unique treatise. The significant points mentioned in this work are as follows:

1 *Niyamsara* contains, for the first time, clear-cut and unambiguous definitions of *vyavahara*, *nishchaya* and *shuddha nayas* (NS, 18 and 49), and helps to remove all confusion in regard to these ethico-spiritual *nayas* (standpoints). A significant reason for the confusion and an improper understanding these *nayas* is that scholars seem to rely more on Kundakunda's commentators than on Kundakunda's own words and his works in their totality, including *Niyamsara*, which is usually ignored.

The application of the ethico-spiritual *nayas* to the description and understanding of the structure and functional mechanism of the self is one of Kundakunda's outstanding contributions. In this respect, he was, indeed, treading a new path on which he remained virtually a lone traveller though some other philosophers, such as Yogindu, Amrtachandra and Nemichandra, etc. subsequently upheld these *nayas*. These *nayas*, in fact, add a new dimension to the Jain doctrine of *anekant* and provide useful insights about the outer and the inner world.

2 *Niyamsara* removes all confusion in regard to the relationship between *dravyarthika* and *pariyarthika nayas* (standpoints), concerning objective reality of the universe, and the ethico-spiritual *nayas*, viz. *nishchaya*, *vyavahara* and *shuddha nayas* concerning the subjective reality of *jiva* (self) (NS, 19).

3 *Niyamsara* removes all doubts as to what constitutes, in Kundakunda's view, *vyavahara dharma*. According to him, it consists of *vrata* (five vows), *samiti* (five carefulness) and *gupti*, (i.e. three restraints of mind, speech and body) (NS, 56-70). All these three major components of moral code of conduct are based on *samyam* (self-restraint or self-control) of one's external behaviour in relation to others, and are rooted in wholesome psychic dispositions. If a person's conduct does not consist of moral rules of *vrata*, *samiti* and *gupti*, he

cannot be considered a truly *dharmaik* (religious) person. Lack of self-restraint is, indeed, the biggest problem of present-day world.

Kundakunda's concept of *vyavahara dhantru* has almost all the main characteristics of *dharma* (piety, righteousness or good moral conduct), namely *ahimsa* (non-violence), *samyam* (self-restraint) and even *tapas* (austerity, see point 5 below). It ensures the good of others, social harmony and social well-being, and along with *nishchaya dhantru* facilitates peace and happiness of the individual.

4 *Niyamsara* also discusses in detail the various components of *nishchaya dhantru* and removes all confusion and ambiguity in regard to *pratikraman* (repentance), etc. methods of self-discipline being desirable methods of self-purification. It makes it clear that from *nishchaya nayu*, the self is the *karta* (doer) and *bhokta* (experiencer) of attachment, aversion, passions, etc. It lays stress on cleansing the internal impurities and distortions (*ubhaya*) of the self through various methods of self-discipline. Kundakunda's emphasis on disciplinary methods of self-reliance for the purification of impurities or negativities in the self rejects the credulous belief that things can be set right by others, including the grace of God. Discipline, in order to be lasting, has to be self-discipline. This applies to both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dhantru*.

5 *Niyamsara* asserts that *dhantru* (conduct) of *vyavahara nayu* is *tapascharan* (practice of austerity) from *vyavahara* point of view, while *dhantru* of *nishchaya nayu* is *tapascharan* (practice of austerity) from *nishchaya* point of view (NS, 55). This characterization of both kinds of *dhantru* as *tapas* is a unique feature of *Niyamsara*, not found in other Jain texts. It endows each of them with the capability of effecting *samvara* (stopping the influx of *karma*) as well as *nivara* (dissociation or destruction of *karma*), as Acharya Pujyapada's commentary *Sarvarthasiddhi* on *Tattvartha Sutra* IX. 3 makes it quite clear, thereby making them the authentic means of liberation.

While the traditional concept of *bahya tapas* (six external austerities), described in the texts dealing with the conduct of householders and ascetics, consists of restraints in eating, including fasting, and bodily discomforts, Kundakunda's *tapascharan* from *vyavahara nayu*, as described in *Niyamsara*, is based on psychological and pragmatic considerations. It not only prevents defilement of the soul coming from outside but also emphasizes certain degree of control of

passions, besides ensuring social harmony and the well-being of others Kundakunda's *pratikraman*, etc., *tapascharan* from *nishchaya nayas* also differs from the enumeration of six internal (*antimanga* or *abhyantara*) austerities in other Jain texts

Kundakunda's self-disciplinary methods of *pratikraman*, etc., described in detail in *Niyamsara*, are well-ried psychological techniques of self-reformation and most directly related to the internal purification of the soul. Only when one indulges in self-introspection and self-analysis and realizes one's faults and weaknesses, can one remove those defects, shortcomings and the accumulated evils of the past, there is no other way. However, this has to be an on-going process if one really wants to change himself, rather than the so-called New Year resolutions, which are meant to be broken. Surveys have shown that 3 out of 10 of these brave New Year warriors will drop out within two weeks. Less than half will falter along for barely half a year. Not even one per cent may endure till the end of the year.

6 *Niyamsara* clarifies that *vyaavahara charitra* and *nishchaya charitra* together constitute *samyak charitra* (enlightened conduct). Kundakunda was well aware that while there are internal reasons, such as attachment, aversion, passions, etc., in the commission of any sinful or unwholesome activity, there are also external circumstances or environmental factors that act as auxiliary or subsidiary cause (*varanatta*) thereof. Hence, Kundakunda lays emphasis on taking into account both external and internal factors and purifying one's inner as well as outer aspects of life.

7 *Niyamsara* not only distinguishes *vyaavahara charitra* and *nishchaya charitra* with their constituent elements, in clear cut and specific terms, but also describes enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge from both *vyaavahara* and *nishchaya nayas* (points of view).

8 *Niyamsara*, contains a unique definition (not found elsewhere) of "*nyaya*", which is identified with the three jewels of enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct (NS, 3). When practised from both *vyaavahara* and *nishchaya* points of view, they necessarily (*nyayena*) lead to the attainment of the state of pure self or supreme soul (*paramatma*), Godhood, divinity, salvation, or self-realization. Since all living beings have the same intrinsic nature as liberated souls, from *shuddha* point of view, (NS, 49), they have the

potential of becoming *suktha* (liberated soul).

9 Kundkunda made actual application of the doctrine of *parinama* (evolution, change or transformation) to the cases of *jru* (soul) as well as *pudgala* (matter)

10 *Nyamsara* distinguishes *subhara* (intrinsic nature) and *ubhara*, i.e. distortion, deviation or modification, in regard to both external physical form (human, sub-human, etc.) and internal psychic disposition (feeling, emotions, etc.) of one's psyche (NS, 15).

11 *Nyamsara* points out that the primary objective of *jru* (self) is to get rid of *ubhara* or *para-bhara* (psychic disposition other than the intrinsic nature of the self, i.e. distorted, non-natural *bhara*), arising out of its association or entanglement with *karma-upadhi* in order to attain salvation.

12 *Nyamsara* contains the significant criteria of *sua para apeksa* (NS, 14), which is explained in detail in the Introduction. In brief, it may be said that in case any kind of modification in a substance involves the association and conditioning of other (*para*) substance in any capacity whatever, then it is said to have *para-apeksa* or *ubhara paryaya* (non-natural modification)

13 Each of the two kinds of *upayoga* (psychic or conscious attentiveness), viz. knowledge (*mana*) and intuitive awareness (*darshan*), are divided into *subhara* and *ubhara* kinds (NS, 10-14). The intrinsic nature (*subhara*) of one's soul is said to be *upadeya* (acceptable), while its distorted modifications (*ubhara*) are considered *heya* (rejectable) (NS, 38)

14 *Nyamsara* explains the concept of three kinds of self (1) *bahnmatra* (Exterior Self) He is one who holds deluded view by identifying himself with the body and indulges in worldly gossips, sensual enjoyments, bragging, etc; (2) *anamatra* (Interior Self) He is one who is devoid of these and practises self-control and repentance, etc self-discipline (NS, 149-151), and (3) *paramatma* (supreme soul). He is one who is free from all defects and impurities (NS, 6-7). It is also stated that one who observes *vrashyukas* (self-discipline and is self-reliant) is *anamatra*; one who does not observe them and depends or relies on others, is *bahnmatra* (NS, 149). Also one who is absorbed in virtuous and pure concentrations is *anamatra* and one who is devoid of them is *bahnmatra* (NS, 151)

15 *Nyāmāra* is said to be written by Kundakunda on the basis of the authoritative pronouncements of *kevalis* (omniscient supreme souls, who have experiential knowledge) and *śrīma-kevalis* (those worthy souls who have immaculate knowledge of all the scriptures) (NS, 1) However, it should not be forgotten that Kundakunda has categorically stated in *Samayasara* (gāthā 1 and 5) that whatever he is describing about the nature of the reality of things, based on the teachings of *śrīma-kevalis* and his own experience, the readers should not suspend their own judgement and should accept it if it satisfies the condition of valid knowledge (*pramāṇa*)

16 In *Nyāmāra*, the six substances, *padgala* (matter), *jīva* (living being), *dharma*, *adharma*, time and space, are said to be *tattvarthas* (NS, 9), i.e. the fundamental principles or categories of life, the true (*yatharth* or as it is) ascertainment of whose nature is considered necessary for enlightened vision and for leading a happy and peaceful life. In most other Jain texts, including *Tattvartha Sūtra*, the *tattvas* (fundamental principles or categories) of life are declared to be seven, viz. *jīva* (living being), *ajīva* (non-living), *āśrava* (influx of material *karma* particles or impurities in the self), *bandha* (*karma* bondage), *samvara* (stopping of the influx of fresh *karmas*), *niṛjara* (dissociation of the already accumulated *karmas*) and *moksha* (salvation or liberation)

17 Enlightened knowledge, which is said to be free from doubt, delusion and vacillation (NS, 51), enables us to distinguish which *tattvas* are *heya* (to be renounced) and which ones are *upadeya* (to be adopted and realized) (NS, 52)

18 Proceeding from the perspective of his ethico-spiritual viewpoints, Kundakunda has stated that the supreme soul perceives and knows all, i.e. *sarvajña* (omniscient) from *vyavahāra* point of view, while from *nishchayā* standpoint he knows only his own true Self, i.e. *ātmanā* (NS, 159) This emphatic assertion is found only in this work. This is meant to refute the contention of those who wanted to promote the concept of determinism (*nyatavāda*) or the fatalistic dependence on fate, destiny or *karma* under the cover of *sarvajñata* (omniscience), thereby depriving Jainism of its distinguishing characteristics, viz. independence and self-reliance.

19 *Nyāmāra* contains the concept that in the state of omniscience, both *jñāna* (knowledge) and *darśana* (intuitive awareness) operate

simultaneously (*yugapat*) as light and heat in sun (NS, 160). However, in the case of an ordinary human being, leading a worldly life, *darshan* and *mana* operate in succession, i.e. *darshan* precedes *mana*, and this is confirmed by Benjamin Libet's experiment (see Introduction, p. 103).

20. *Nyamsara* categorically states that knowledge (*mana*) and intuitive awareness (*darshan*) are not different from the soul (consciousness) and logically argues that both *mana* and *darshan* are *sua-para prakashak*, i.e. illuminate the self as well as other objects (NS, 161-165).

21. In *Nyamsara*, we find a detailed and minute description of six *avashyakas* (essential, independent self-disciplinary activities). The concept of *avashyakas* (NS, 142) is indeed quite significant and original in the sense that it emphasizes *avash*, i.e. *na usha* (not dependent or relying on other, i.e. self-disciplinary, self-reliant) approach, which is psychologically satisfying and productive of lasting effect. Since more than 90 per cent of our activities or responses (reactions) in life are the outcome or result of our unconscious (mind), as neuroscientist Michael Gazzaniga tells us, Kundakunda's emphasis on performing actions (not reactions) with conscious awareness and attentiveness (*upayoga*), independent of the constraints and compulsions of neurobiological processes (*karmas*), facilitates moral and spiritual development necessary for peace, happiness and social well-being.

Moreover, while most preceptors or *gurus* want their followers to remain dependent on them, and to keep looking towards them for sustenance and support, Kundakunda wants his disciples and aspirants to be self-reliant and self-confident so that they can realise the highest objective of human endeavour by their own efforts, unaided by others. The activities that are imposed on unwilling souls, and adhered to grudgingly, are neither durable nor productive of desired results.

The inclusion of *pratikraman*, etc. activities in *avashyakas* reflects Kundakunda's deep insights and understanding of the structure and functioning of the soul because the self-disciplinary activities of *pratikraman*, etc., listed under *avashyakas*, are precisely the ones that alone can make *jiva* (self) truly self-reliant and independent (*avash*). Only such self-reliant souls are capable of attaining liberation from *karmic* bondage. The names and contents of *avashyakas*, given in

Niyamsara, are also different in their designation and serial order from those found in traditional Digambara and Shvetambara Jain texts.

22 *Niyamsara* contains detailed and realistic description of *param samadhi* (equanimity), which is not found elsewhere (NS, 122-133).

23 The division of *bhakti* (devotion) into *Nirvrti-bhakti* and *Yoga-bhakti* and their description in *Niyamsara* is also unique

24. In *Niyamsara*, *pratikraman* (repentance of past misdeeds), *pratyakhyan*, *alochana*, etc are considered part of *nishchaya* (i.e. internal, self-referential) *dharma*, and hence mere verbal recitation of them is said to be like reading of text unto oneself and others. Thus, the practice of reciting the texts of *pratikraman*, etc by the ascetics as well as the householders loudly, collectively and publicly, which looks like mere external formality, can hardly be considered to be in tune with *pratikraman*, etc self-disciplinary methods (outlined in *Niyamsara*), which aim at purifying the mind at the root level, deep inside, not merely at the surface level.

25 In the psycho-spiritual practice of *pratikraman*, etc, described in *Niyamsara*, one examines one's own internal mental states and psychic dispositions, the inner world, with mindfulness or conscious attentiveness (*upayoga*), but without attachment, i.e. with an attitude of non-reactive, non-judgemental observing of one's inner states (*drashta* and *sakshi-bhava*, or "choiceless awareness"), it is a process of deconditioning, clearing our mind of the emotional baggage and intellectual garbage, a process of purification and even training of the mind so that it can remain peaceful and equanimous, free from emotional and mental agitation (*ksobha*) even in adverse and trying circumstances. In emphasizing that peace and purity of the mind is true happiness, Kundakunda, the great psycho-analyst and the super spiritual scientist, is not pointing to some impossible, idealistic goal. Of course, one needs time to learn, observe and practice. If you rush, you will be feeding your mind, not changing your body or mental states. If you bog down doing any of the practice, recommit to your desire to learn. Then try again. Speed is not important.

26 Another unique feature of *Niyamsara*, reflecting Kundakunda's philosophical originality and ingenuity is contained in the statement: "*nivartanam eva sadhya, sadhya nivartanam icha samuddhattha*" (NS, 183), i.e. *nivartan*,

which represents a state of immateriality and formlessness not only signifies extinguishment of empirical self, together with senses, mind, body and all impure and unwholesome thought-activities, such as *ahamkar* (ego, pride), *manakara* (attachment, aversion), etc., that are associated with the embodied self (NS, 180-181), but also means attainment of the pure and natural attributes of the self, such as *sat* or *astutva* (existence), *chit* (sentience or consciousness) or *keval jñāna* (immaculate knowledge), and *anand* or *keval saukhyam* (happiness bliss unlimited) (NS, 182). These attributes and *siddhahood*, i.e. the state of liberated soul, are one and the same thing. This reconciliation of functional aspects and substantial aspect of the self, between pure consciousness and a conscious entity or being, obviously seems to have been accomplished or made possible as a result of Kundakunda's ethico-spiritual points of view. Moreover, the detailed and clear description of *nirvan*, which is contained in *Nyamsara* (NS, 177-182), is not available in other Jain texts.

Nyamsara is, in fact, the key to the understanding of *Samayasara* and Kundakunda's social and psycho-spiritual philosophy. My sincere advice to those who want to be free from the net of *sankalpas* (the conditioned psychological states or crystalized mind) and *vikalpas* (mental vicissitudes and thought constructions that create doubts and vacillations in regard to cognized objects) and are desirous of drinking the ambrosia (nectar) of peace, happiness and social well-being in this life, is that they must read and understand this short treatise (*Nyamsara*) before taking up the study of *Samayasara*. This will help them not only to steer clear of the confusion or the tangle of viewpoints (*nayas*) and understand properly the three ethico-spiritual *nayas*, but also to ascertain correctly the significance of external, social, moral conduct (*vyavahara dharma*) as also of internal purification through self disciplinary methods (*nishchaya dharma*). This will also enable them to have enlightened vision as regards *ashubha*, *shubha* and *shuddha*, as well as morality and spirituality.

Nyamsara is indeed a great bible of morality and spirituality, teaching the lessons of external self-restraint and internal self-discipline. Since Kundakunda had dived deep in the inner recesses of human nature, he was well aware that if one allows the mind to do what it likes, one will gradually become its slave. Through the practice of

self-restraint and self-discipline, one becomes a master of one's mind and senses. Every exercise of self-control brings with it added strength of body and mind, whereas every time one succumbs to one's habits and desires, he becomes weaker. Since *self-imposed* limitations can help to free us, Dr. Dean Ornish states, "What appears like self-restraint can be self-empowerment. Ultimately it is a choice between true freedom or being a slave to our compulsions" (see page 72 of Introduction).

One of the greatest contributions of Kundakunda, reflecting his deep understanding of the structure and functioning of the psyche, is his realization that people, conditioned as they are by their instincts and *karmas*, the emotional and mental baggage, enshrined in the unconscious (mind) and the synaptic brain, are constantly looking outward, that the senses are usually attuned or trained to go outward towards the objects of senses and seek satisfaction or transitory happiness in the gratification of senses. He was aware that as the mundane soul is well acquainted and quite familiar with desire for worldly things and enjoyment thereof, the materialist pleasures attract a person with magnetic force (*Samayasara*, 4).

Kundakunda, therefore, laid emphasis on looking inward, to observe and know not only external objects but also one's internal thoughts and feelings with detachment and realise the truth that peace and happiness lie within, not outside. As Kabir said "*lahar dhundhe lahar ko, kapda dhundhe soot, jru dhundhe brahma ko, teeno bhuta ke bhuta*," i.e. the waves are looking for ocean, the cloth is trying to find thread and the self is seeking *brahman* (*paramatman* or supreme soul, which represents the intrinsic purity of the self)—these three do not understand the reality of things and continue to remain ignorant fools. Every living being is potentially divine and Godhood lies within, not outside. *Atra-eva brahma*, i.e. the soul alone is *brahman*, there is no difference between the two.

Again, the great merit of Kundakunda is that he never wanted to impose any of his views, ideas or concepts, contained in his works, on readers on the authority of the Revealed Word (the scriptures) of the Lord. He also did not ask people to accept his description of the reality because it is based on his experience. He wanted people to read, listen, think, critically examine, never to suspend their own

judgement and that one should accept them only after verification by one's own experience (*Samayasara, gatha 5*)

The same idea was expressed by Siddhasen Divakar and Shankara. When asked by King Vikramaditya, "What is truth?" Siddhasen replied. "Everyone has his/her own definition of 'truth' and that it is conditional." When Vikramaditya again asked, "How about traditions (which) have been established by our ancestors and have passed the tests of time?" he responded "Would the system established by ancestors hold true on examination? In case it does not, I am not here to justify it for the sake of saving the traditional grace of the dead, irrespective of the wrath I may have to face." Shankara is also said to have declared that he would not accept any unscientific thing even if mentioned in the Vedas.

Kundakunda's principles and style of explanation — developed from the "givens" of self-actualization and his own self-experience — were useful for understanding not only the weaknesses, failure, and meanness of people, but also the potential of the soul, and he had no inclination to ignore these realities. One may, however, encounter certain difficulties in understanding his works, especially if the reader proceeds from purely analytical, descriptive and objective perspective. Things that were quite clear to him may not seem so to the reader.

The subject matter pertains to the inner recesses of human nature, the internal connections, which offer a lot of things about the human nature and the potentialities of the self, were clear to Kundakunda because he had been thinking about them and working with them for a long, long time and at that level of his works which make it valuable, the connections are internal. The unities he speaks of, one might stipulate, are there, but to see or feel as he did requires that you do the same kind of homework, pursue the same line of independent and reflective or contemplative research.

Yet all through his works one finds exposed nodes open to intuitive verification, good enough for any man of hungry common sense. In fact, it is those points of exposure — "insights", we call them — that make people keep on reading Kundakunda, that have given his works their popularity and long life. People read him because he has a psychology that applies to *them*. In reality, his thoughts go beyond the accustomed limits of psychology; what he wanted to write was

not easy to express. One can imagine how difficult and painstaking it has been for me to translate and explain it in English.

If the exposition of the three ethico-spiritual *nayas* of Kundakunda and of the three jewels from both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* viewpoints, given in this work is accepted and adhered to, it will not only help in diminishing the so-called *karma-kanda* (ritualism, superstition, etc.) and too much stress being laid on outward, external practices of unnecessary bodily discomforts (*kaya-klesh*) and mere verbal recitation of repentance etc. methods of self-discipline, but also in removing laxity (*shubhachara*) in the moral and spiritual conduct of Jain householders and Jain ascetics.

Moreover, it will also help in rectifying the misguided views of the so-called *mumukshus* (people desirous of *moksha*, i.e. salvation), who claim themselves to be the most devoted followers of Kundakunda. They think that mere *atma-jnana* (knowledge of the soul and about the soul) will enable them to attain self-realization and thus ignore or deny the significance of *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dharma* (conduct), i.e. external self-restraint (*samyam*) of *vrata* (moral rules of conduct), etc. from *vyavahara naya*, and internal self-discipline (inner purification through repentance, etc. methods) from *nishchaya naya*, contained in Kundakunda's works, especially *Niyamsara*. They should remember Pandit Todarmal's words "*keval atma jnana hi tau to moksha-marg hai nahin*," i.e. mere knowledge of the soul does not make path of salvation.

It is indeed a matter of deep regret that correct understanding of Jainism as a way of life seems to be lacking even among its followers, who generally know more of its rituals and rites, ceremonials and laudatory compositions, the dogmas and recitations to *Tirthankaras*, rather than the rationale and significance of the lofty principles of Jainism. For the correct knowledge of the guiding principles of our life, contained in the scriptures, we have to read them carefully and understand their meaning properly. But since the scriptures are in Prakrit and Sanskrit, which are incomprehensible to 99 per cent of the people, most of us do not bother to read and understand them and mainly rely on available translations or commentaries written in Hindi, English or Gujarati, etc. or other languages.

Accordingly, it is all the more necessary that scholars, who translate

and interpret the sacred texts in these languages, should fulfil their task with a sense of great responsibility and must take proper care in seeing that what they are presenting, before the people and the world at large, is the true and correct message of the sacred texts, and not do things in a hurry or for extraneous considerations of supporting a particular sect or viewpoint

It is rightly said, "Great religions must be renewed by the intellectual and spiritual attainments of their adherents, otherwise they die. Each Age needs renewal, re-statement and re-interpretation of the religious traditions but only rarely does religion produce a creative genius, someone who not only travels along secure and well-trodden paths but also reaches out into the unknown, explores new territories, scans new horizons, undertakes the difficult, dangerous and thankless task of challenging established dogmas and practices. Only rarely does a man arise whose devotion and dedication to his religion is matched by his determination to extend its domain into new areas of thought and action, even areas considered to be outside the pale of established religious rituals, practices and observances." There can hardly be any doubt that Kundakunda was such a creative genius.

An Austrian Indologist has observed

It is to be feared that Jainism is not being adequately considered in the present-day endeavours of establishing a relationship between Indian and Western philosophy. It is striking how often important ideas and even whole systems are not being noticed beyond the limits of the own school. Generally we can state that many of the most important philosophers of ancient India (like Sri Kundakundacharya, Umaswami, Akalanka, Siddhasen Divakar, Samantabhadracharya etc.), would be completely unknown or only very inadequately known if we merely knew them through the records of other schools and systems. This holds good in a high degree in the case of Jainism.

True happiness and peace are the inherent qualities of our soul and are within us. No other philosopher of the world has laid so much emphasis, as Kundakunda has done, on the internal aspects and the need to conquer the inner enemies, the passions of anger,

greed, ego, etc which are termed as distortions (*ubhava*) of the intrinsic nature of peace and happiness of our true Self. Kundakunda's path of salvation depends on self-reformation, perfection and alignment of the three psychological faculties or aspects of consciousness, viz. affective or emotional, cognitive, and conative, willing or activity in the form of *samyaktva* (enlightened vision), enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct.

The present work is my humble attempt to present the basic philosophy of Acharya Kundakunda in its proper perspective. It is also a significant addition towards presenting authentic scriptures of Jainism in English language and interpreting the fundamental concepts of the Jains in modern context and on scientific basis.

The English translation and commentary of this work was first done by Uggar Sam Jain, which was first published in Jagmander Lal Jain Memorial Series, Vol V as part of *Sacred Books of the Jains*, the first revision thereof was undertaken by Shri C. Devakumar, Senior Scientist in the Indian Agricultural Research Institute, for which I express my sincere thanks to him. Subsequently, the undersigned has further modified and revised it. Even after the typing of the modified and revised version was completed, it has again undergone several revisions and drastic modifications, with the result that it is now a completely new translation by me. My own detailed explanation of the original *gathas* is contained in the Introduction. The commentary of Shri Uggar Sam Jain has been drastically cut down but wherever found useful it has been made use of, with certain modifications, and due credit has been given to him. Since such significant works are not edited or published frequently, I have taken due care in not doing things in a hurry, which might compromise its authenticity in any way.

In view of what has been stated above, I alone am responsible for any shortcoming in the final outcome of English translation and commentary, and the exposition of Kundakunda's philosophy, that is being presented before you in my introduction. In works of this kind there is bound to be some repetition but that is not considered a fault. I have tried to make full use of the translations and commentaries in Sanskrit and Hindi of this significant work, particularly those of Padmaprabha Maladhardeva, Brahmachari Shital Prasad, Aryika Gyanmati and Pandit Parmeshthi Das, etc. I have also

drawn heavily on Kundakunda's other works, particularly *Samayasara* and its various commentaries in Sanskrit, Hindi and English, which make extensive use of *nashcharya*, *vyavahara* and *shuddha nayas*, and benefited greatly from dozens of other books and articles, written by various scholars, dealing with these *nayas* and other aspects of Kundakunda's philosophy

I will be amiss in my duty if I do not express my sincere gratefulness to Shri Navindra Jain for making the publication of this edition as also of earlier two books *Spiritual Enlightenment* and *Spiritual Insights* possible in the memory of his revered father, late Shri Nem Chand Jain. While most people give donation or financial help for name and fame, I found Shri Navindra Jain quite different. Even though I made no reference to his name in the Preface of the earlier two books, he did not express a word about that. He meets the criteria of a true donor given in Jain texts, viz. that the giver (*datra*) must give with a feeling of joy, humility and enthusiasm. And what else could be a nobler cause than serving the cause of *Jivmukti* through the promotion of principles of Jainism.

I also express my sincere thanks to my sons Rajendra Kumar Jain and Pradeep Kumar Jain and daughter-in-law Sunita Jain for their encouragement, support and help of various kinds. My granddaughter Ruchika Jain and grandson Anekant Jain have also helped in proofreading and carrying out corrections.

Writing a book, as Ledoux said, is a humbling experience. You must come to realize how many things you thought you understood but really didn't, at least not well enough to explain them clearly (especially in a foreign language). Writing makes one more specific, exact and rigorous about what one is saying. When one has to write something for another person to read, he has to be more precise and involved. His conscious attentiveness (*upayoga*) and intention to communicate and explain increases. One gains clearer perspective. Thus, I have learnt a lot while writing *Salvation through Self-discipline*, and I hope you too while reading it.

May this work instil courage of conviction to the people to attain discriminative insight in regard to true Self (*sva*) and other (*para*), i.e. enlightened vision, and enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, which will necessarily lead to salvation, i.e. peace, happiness.

and social well-being. May this book provide inspiration to the readers to get them started on the practice of external self-restraint in their relations with others and of internal self-discipline with a view to purify their soul of distortions (*ubhava*) of attachment, aversion and passions. The whole moral and spiritual discipline in Jainism is an exercise in gradual advancement on the path of external self-restraint and internal self-discipline and limitation of wants and possession of goods, thereby increasing one's detachment, equanimity, independence and self-reliance.

The assumption is that this practice of moral and spiritual discipline will do more for the inquiring individual than reading any number of books or articles. While one learns by informational or instructional learning and by watching other people act, one must recognize the importance of self-awareness, which is essential for personal learning and transformation. I hope the material presented in this work will encourage self-examination and self-analysis. But most people probably read as observers, standing outside looking in, without much personal involvement. In that way, one learns *about* something rather than learning experientially.

Self-restraint and self-discipline are learnt by practice. Once actual practice has begun, then books (carefully chosen for their relevance and reliability) can enrich and broaden one's outlook and understanding. But unless there is a sound foundation of hands-on experience, resulting from practice, the books will remain undigested in the domain of intellect, and will not be of much use. After all, cookbooks are fun to read, but they aren't very nutritious. They are most helpful to somebody who is actually involved in cooking. So once you have read the book, which provides all the necessary guidelines and rules of self-discipline, the next step is to start practice of external self-restraint and internal self-discipline. And if not now, when?

Jain Mission
New Delhi

JAGDISH PRASAD JAIN 'SADHAK'

10 December 2004

Introduction

A General Appreciation of Kundakunda

Kundakunda was an outstanding philosopher, a versatile genius, a celebrated literary figure, an original thinker, a doyen of saints, a great religious teacher, and a great scientist of the inner recesses of human nature, who flourished in the beginning of the Christian era ¹ He occupies a very prominent place in the history of the Jain Church and philosophy A. N Upadhye described him as "one of the greatest authors that the Jaina church has produced" ² In fact, he is one of the greatest thinkers that the world has produced It is not without reason that he is held in great veneration especially by the Digambara sect of the Jains, who remember him next only to Mahavira and his *Ganadharas* (apostle) Gautam. The origin of almost all the lineages of the Digambara monks is traced back to Kundakunda As the leader of *Mula-Sangha*, he was the most eminent among the ascetics Even among the Shvetambara scholars, Kundakunda has always been respected as one of the foremost representatives of the Jain Church ³

The original or real name of Kundakunda is said to be Padmanandi. He came to be called Kondakunda or Kundakunda because of his native place (Kaundakundapura) to which he belonged. Besides, Padmanandi and Kundakunda, his other names are said to be Vakragreeva, Elacharya, Gradhrapiccha, and Mahamati. The name Vakragreeva suggests that he had some problem in his neck, but while his neck may be *rukra* (curved), his words, Acharya Mahaprajna says, makes us spellbound even today. According to *Epigraphia Carnatica*, Kundakunda is said to have possessed excellent religious conduct and was endowed with the miraculous power to move in the air. He moved in the air four fingers above the ground, with the result that he was not touched in the least, internally and externally, by the dust (of passion), the earth being the abode of dust.

Moreover, according to *Darshanasara* of Devasena and Jayasena's commentary of *Panchastikaya*, Kundakunda is said to have travelled to Videha *kshetra*, where he is said to have received much by way of religious enlightenment from Srimadharasvami, the then existing *Tirthankara* in that *kshetra*, and he had his religious doubts cleared. This traditional description of Kundakunda finds support or confirmation in the third *gatha* of *Pravachanasara* in which Kundakunda pays obeisance to the contemporary *Arahantas* (Worthy Lords Conquerors of internal enemies of delusion, passions, etc.) in the *Mamsha* region (where human beings lived), beyond *Bharat* (India) region, where no *Tirthankara* existed after Mahavira, who attained liberation in 527 B.C.

This indicates that in those days, there was no taboo or restriction on Digambara saints visiting abroad, especially by air, and that Kundakunda had great curiosity about knowing the secrets of the human mind and the universe. It also proves that there can be *Tirthankaras* and Enlightened Souls even outside India and that it is not the monopoly of *Bharat* alone to be the only abode of *arahantas* and those holding enlightened views. Jain texts as well as historical proof lend support to the view that Jain saints, including Digambara (naked) *monks* (ascetics) used to travel outside India in the whole of *Mamsha* region (region inhabited by human beings), which may be said to comprise of the whole

of the present-day world Lord Mahavira himself is said to have travelled for propagation of *dharma* (the path of righteousness) to *yavanshruti* (probably Greece or Persia), *Gandhar* (Kandhar), etc places

In the making of any great human being, the parents, particularly the mother, play a significant role and Kundakunda was no exception to that His parents, Gunakirti (father) and Shantala (mother) were simple, straightforward, religious persons In the formative years of his son, Shantala used to recite lullaby, which were of great spiritual significance, inspiring her son to imbibe those ideas She used to say

Your intrinsic nature is pure, you are an enlightened being, free from all blemishes and delusions of the mundane world, and different from the body; you are Knower (*jñata*) and Observer (*drashta*), you are of the nature of *paramatma* (supreme soul), indivisible, abode of good qualities or attributes, conqueror of sensual attractions, and that you should renounce pride, etc passions, you are fundamentally peaceful, self-controlled, indestructible, of the nature of liberated soul (*siddha*), devoid of all kinds of sins and impurities, of the magnificence of light, and so you should give up all delusions, you are alone (unitary being), free, conscious being, of the nature of consciousness, eternal, supersensuous, and that you should give up identification and attachment with the body; you are desireless, free from karmas, possessor of three jewels of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct, absolutely pure, knower of *tattvas*, sentient being and hence you should renounce all desires, you are devoid of procrastination, pure, possessor of *ananta dhatushaya* (infinite vision, knowledge, vigour and bliss), *brahman* (of the nature of soul) and that you should protect the intrinsic purity of consciousness, you are omniscient, beyond mind, body and speech, untainted, detached, knower of *tattvas*, of the nature of *paramatma* and hence you should remember your true nature of consciousness; you are of the nature of sentiency, free from karmas, omniscient, and hence you should concentrate on the eminent

nature of *Paramatman* (Godhood) ⁴

Kundakunda's Works

Among the significant works of Kundakundacharya are *Panchastikaya*, *Samayasara*, *Pravachanasara*, *Niyamsara*, *Ashta Pabuda* and *Baras Anurekkha*. He is also said to be the author of *Rayanasara*, *Ten Bhuktis* and *Kural*. Unlike the first three works, which contain a large number of interpolations, as is evident in increased number of *gathas* in Jayasena's recension (8 extra *gathas* in *Panchastikaya*, 24 in *Samayasara* and 36 in *Pravachanasara*), *Niyamsara* is a concise, compact, well-knit short treatise having no interpolations. Kundakunda's works, which are written in Shaurseni Prakrit (also called Jain Shaurseni) are read with respect and devotion by all the sects of Jains.

Niyamsara

Kundakundacharya was not interested in philosophical disputations but in expounding the truth which could help in promoting the peace and happiness of the individual and social well-being of the people. In his writings, he did not criticize any school of thought by name for he was quite aware that there are various kinds of living beings or mundane souls, having different interests, different psychic dispositions, different levels of intelligence, and holding different views, etc (NS, 156). Therefore, he cautions against indulging in any kind of verbal controversies, debates or arguments (*uchan uruda*) not only with those professing other faiths or holding opposite views but also with one's own co-religionists (even those professing same faith may have different viewpoints on certain issues) (NS, 156).

This *gatha* (NS, 156) is indeed very significant as it emphasizes that one should not waste one's time, energy and resources in unnecessary and useless talks or controversies but should concentrate on meaningful pursuits that are conducive to one's peace, happiness and social well-being. In *Ashta Pabuda*, Kundakunda has stated "Teachings are endless. Time at our disposal is short. Our wisdom is misdirected. Hence learn only that ends births

and deaths" An enlightened person or Interior self (*antaratma*), who practises self-control, righteousness and detachment and is self-reliant (NS, 149) He does not indulge in unnecessary arguments, disputations, wrangling, etc (*jalpe*) (NS, 150) Kundakunda was well aware that one could realize the truth or *dharma* by indulging in controversies or disputations

While *Niyamsara* is included in *sara-traya*, i.e. three of Kundakunda's works ending with *sara* or containing the essence of truth, viz *Samayasara*, *Pravachanasara* and *Niyamsara*, A N Upadhye has given greater prominence to Kundakunda's works, *Panchastakaya Samayasara* and *Pravachanasara*, which have even been compared by him to *Prasthan-traya* (*Upanishads*, *Brahmasutras* and the *Bhagavad Gita*) of the Vedantins Each of these has been commented upon in Sanskrit by both Amrtachandra and Jayasena among others

Commentary on *Niyamsara*

Unlike some other works, the only commentary in Sanskrit of the *Niyamsara* is by Padmaprabha Maladhardeva He has divided the text into twelve *adhyakaras* (chapters) This division, Upadhye remarks, has no sanction from the original text, nor does it facilitate the understanding of the text in any way; the author, it appears, never intended to have any divisions in his work⁵

Another point of significance to note about this commentary is that Padmaprabhadeva is a great admirer of Amrtachandra and has tried to emulate him in several ways He has quoted Amrtachandra 15 times in this work while commenting on *gathas* 7, 19, 24, 40, 42, 44, 49, 50, 55, 82, 83, 99, 107, 159, and 178 and has also displayed considerable enthusiasm in his commentary He even indulged in composing his own verses, besides explaining Kundakunda's ideas in prose Amrtachandra has composed only about twenty verses of his own while commenting on 275 *gathas* of *Pravachanasara* and 278 verses (popularly known as *kalash*) of his own while commenting on 415 *gathas* of *Samayasara* But Padmaprabhadeva has composed as many as 311 verses of his own, besides quoting a large number of verses from other texts,

while commenting on 187 *gathas* of *Nṛyaṁsara*. This may probably be due to the fact that *Nṛyaṁsara's Tattvaparyā* *ṛtti* commentary by Padmaprabhadeva is the only major work written or commented by him. His only other work is *Paṁṣṭumath Stotra* or *Lakṣṇa Stotra* containing only nine verses

Another very significant feature or aspect of his commentary on *Nṛyaṁsara* is that like Amṛtachandra, his commentary contains "high-flowing spiritual muse,"⁶ as A N Upadhye rightly observes. This is quite evident even from the chapter headings for which he alone is responsible (Kundakunda did not make any division of *Nṛyaṁsara* into various chapters). For instance, in giving headings of various chapters, he added his own adjectives such as "*paramārtha*", i.e. that which is concerned with ultimate reality (in chapter 5 and 6 dealing with *pratikraman* and *pratyakhyān* respectively), *param*, i.e. supreme (in chapters 7 and 10 dealing with *alochana* and *bhakti* respectively), *nishchaya* (in chapter 8 concerning *pratyushchitta*), *nishchaya* as well as *param* (in chapter 11 dealing with *avashyaka*), and *shuddha*, i.e. pure (in chapter 3 dealing with various *bhāva*, i.e. psychic dispositions and chapter 12 dealing with *upāyoga*)

In this regard, it may be stated that in all his works Kundakunda has used *paramārtha naya* only twice (*gatha* 7 and 65) in *Baras Anuprekṣha* (*Anuprekṣha*) and once (*gatha* 6) in *Sutra pāṇḍa*. It has not figured even once in any of the *gathas* (verses) in *Nṛyaṁsara*. Hence, there appears no justification whatsoever of *paramārtha* forming part of the headings of chapter 5 (containing 18 *gathas*) and chapter 6 (containing 12 *gathas*). Likewise, the use of the adjectives "*param*" in headings of chapters 7, 10 and 11 and "*shuddha*" in designating chapters 3 and 12 are not at all proper and do not in any way help in understanding the text, as Upadhye rightly remarks. Keeping in view these facts, we have removed the various high sounding, hi-fi adjectives, such as "*paramārtha*", "*nishchaya*", "*param*", etc. before chapter headings. We have, however, retained the scheme of chapterisation as devised by Padmaprabhadeva for the convenience of the readers.

Three of Kundakunda's works, viz. *Pāṇḍastikāya*, *Pravachanasāra* and *Samayasāra* are generally given much prominence, *Nṛyaṁsara*

is nonetheless a unique spiritual treatise and a very significant work. The commentator of *Niyamasara* has characterised this work as "*bhagarata shastra*" (a treatise dealing with supreme soul, i.e. the innate nature of the pure self describing or representing "*shabda brahma*" (*paramatma* or the supreme soul in words) which leads to supreme happiness ("*pramananada pradani*"), eternal happiness ("*shasvat sukha*") and liberation (*moksha*) (commentary on NS, 187) and to the status of "*param brahman*"⁷ (supreme soul or *paramatma*) (verse 301 by Commentator) In brief, *Niyamasara* deals with the path of liberation, which is the means of attaining Godhood, ultimate freedom and happiness or salvation (*param nirvana*) (NS, 4)

The concept of *niyam*

Kundakunda defines the word "*niyam*" in his treatise *Niyamasara* in a unique way, in a sense, which is quite different in meaning from those used in other religions and even in Jain texts written by other renowned scholars.⁸ For instance, in *Patanjali Yoga*, *niyam* is said to be five-fold, viz., *shaucha* (purity, both external and internal), *santosha* (contentment which is said to be the foundation of happiness), *tapa* (austerity) which is defined as maintaining an attitude of equanimity even in adverse circumstances, external, environmental conditions such as heat and cold, hunger and thirst, as well as adverse internal, psychic dispositions or mental states, such as pleasure, and pain, loss and profit, honour and dishonour, etc.) *sudhyaya* (study of scriptures, literally it can mean *su adhyayana*, i.e. meticulous study of good or ennobling literature, and *sui-adhyayana*, i.e. study of the true nature of the self), and *Ishtara prandhana* (surrender of all of one's actions to God and reliance on God's grace)

According to Kundakunda, *niyam* is rule of self-discipline, which necessarily (*nyamena*) has to be practised for the attainment of liberation. This *niyam* or path of liberation, he states, consists of enlightened vision or world-view (*darshan*), enlightened knowledge (*jnana*) and enlightened conduct (*charitra*) (NS, 3). Another description of *niyam* is contained in *Niyamasara gatha* 120 which states that he, who abstains from *shubha* (auspicious or good) and

ashubha (inauspicious or bad) forms of speech, renounces attachment, etc impure *bhavas* (mental states or psychic dispositions) and contemplates upon his own soul is definitely said to observe *nyam* (rule of self-discipline)

The affective (*karmaphala chetana*, the instinctive tendency for likes and dislikes or experiencing the fruits of one's past actions or karma), cognitive (*jñana chetana*, i.e. knowledge consciousness) and the conative (willing, activity or *karma chetana*, i.e. consciousness of one's own actions) are the three aspects of consciousness, which is the essential characteristic of the self or the soul. They are the innate nature or natural characteristics of the soul. They are the spiritual powers and are inherent in the soul and found only in living beings. Thus, they are the natural things to do by a living being. Therefore, they are necessarily (*nyamena*) to be practised.

Moksha-marg

Unlike the *Tattvārtha Sūtra* [I 1], the word "*śamyak*" (enlightened) is not used or affixed before "*darśhan*", "*jñana*" and "*charitra*" (the three characteristics of self or soul). This may be due to the constraints of poetic composition. However, the word "*sara*" (true essence, real nature, enlightened or right), Kundakunda observes, is used to exclude *upareet* (distorted perverted or deluded) meaning or understanding of these three characteristics (NS, 3). Moreover, the use of the words "*sammattant*" in Prakrit or "*śamyaktva*" in Sanskrit, i.e. "*śamyak-darśhan*" or enlightened world-view (NS, 5 and 90) and "*sarmanant*" or "*śaṃnana*" in Sanskrit (*śamyak jñana* or enlightened knowledge) (NS, 11) as well as the practice of *śamyaktva jñana charanam* (enlightened view, knowledge and conduct) by completely renouncing *mithya darśhan-jñana-charitram* (deluded or distorted view, knowledge, conduct) (NS, 91) leave not the slightest doubt that these three characteristics have to be enlightened (*śamyak*). The word "*śamyak*" (enlightened) points to the direction towards the good or well-being of the soul. Thus, enlightened world-view, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct constitute unitary *moksha-marga*, the path of liberation (NS, 4). These three components of *moksha-marga*

are known as *ratna-traya* or the three jewels in Jainism.

Samyaktva

Kundakunda thereafter explains the nature and characteristics of these three jewels. He defines *samyaktva* (*samyak-darshan* or enlightened vision or world-view) as *apta-agam-tattvanam shraddhanam* (NS, 5), i.e. correct understanding and firm conviction in regard to the true nature of *apta* (the divinity in a living being epitomized in its perfect and purest form as exemplified by an *Arhat* or *Tirthankara*), *agam* (scripture) and *tattvanam* (the true nature of the substances, the self (*jiva* or consciousness) and non-self (*ajiva* or matter) and other categories, aspects or principles of life resulting from their interaction). These *tattvas* are explained at a later stage.

Describing the real nature of *apta* (God or Godhood), Kundakunda states that he is faultless, pure, free from all defects (delusion, attachment, aversion, etc.), weaknesses and limitations. He adds that one who is free from all kinds of physical and mental afflictions, agitations and defects of mundane life, such as hunger, thirst, birth, disease, old age, death, anxiety, fear, delusion, attachment, aversion, pride, etc. and is all-conscious, all pure, all-blissful and self-absorbed, is the only and true God, *apta*, *siddha* (perfect soul) or *paramappa* (*paramatma*, the highest, supreme self) (NS, 6-7).

Kundakunda's emphatic assertion that apart from this conception of supreme self there is no other *paramatma* (NS, 7) or God is meant to refute the other ideas of God as a Creator, Protector, Ruler or Judge, etc. which inspire awe rather than true respect. According to Jainism, there is intrinsically Godhood or divinity in every living being and this becomes manifest in the state of salvation or emancipation which is achieved by practising *nyaya* (self-discipline) of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct, and is not the result of any divine grace.

The Jains venerate the *arhantas*, *Tirthankaras* or *Jinas*, who are human beings like us but have conquered the baser animal instincts, impulses and passions, the real enemies of the pure nature of the self. Such personages are revered because they have achieved by

their own efforts the fullest development of personality, the supreme state of Godhood. They are, therefore, regarded as an ideal, a model or guide so that by following their example, by emulating them and inculcating those qualities and self discipline, one can elevate himself to the same position or condition (*vande-tad-guna labdhye*)⁹

The rules of guidance laid down by the *Tirthankaras* are called *agam* (scripture), which also help us in ascertaining the reality of things as they really are. *Tattvārtha* means ascertaining the true nature of the substances with their various attributes and modifications (NS, 9), particularly the self and the non-self. *Tattvārtha shraddhanam* implies or signifies firm conviction in regard to the true nature of *jīva* or self (consciousness), i.e. about the existence of soul, distinct from *padgala* (matter). Such a conviction (*shraddha*) is a necessary prerequisite of *śamyaḥ-darśhan* and forms the basis of the proper understanding of the reality of things and the categories or principles of life (*tattvas*). It helps in the proper understanding of the karmic bondage arising out of the interaction between the self and matter and leads to spiritual awakening. The ascertainment of the reality has to be objective (*yathārtha*) and dispassionate, not coloured or guided by one's bias, prejudice or likes and dislikes.

To translate *śamyaḥ* or *śamyaḥ darśhan* as "right faith" or "right belief," as is usually done, is not at all appropriate, it is indeed quite misleading and confusing. Faith or belief can be a proper translation of the term "*vaśīkṛtsa*", which denotes trust in other or external things, such as scriptures or persons, but not of *shraddha*, which is internal determination, conviction based on one's own experience. Jain texts make use of the term "*shraddha*", not "*vaśīkṛtsa*", in regard to *śamyaḥ-darśhan*. Etymologically, *shraddha* is made of two words, "*śrat*" and "*dha*". "*Śrat*" is an indeclinable (*avyaya*) and has no meaning here while "*dha*" is a verb which means "*dharan kārana*," i.e. to determine, decide and commit. Obviously, this commitment, cannot be without awareness of a goal, determination, choice, motivation, attitude, inclination, will power, and direction. Thus, *shraddha* implies *determination* in regard to anything according to one's *nich* (inclination),

thinking or understanding. *Shraddha* implies awareness, appreciation, and understanding of the reality; it is conviction rooted in an intuitive grasp of truth, not mere blind faith or superstition. It is one's own decision arrived at after due consideration of various factors and weighing the pros and cons, the rightness or wrongness of a course of action

Upayoga

After describing *samyaktva*, Kundakunda proceeds to describe the cognitive or knowledge aspect of the self or *jiva* in *Niyamsara gathas* 10-14, while the conative or activity aspect, i.e. *samyak charitra* (enlightened conduct) is described in chapters 4 to 11. *Jiva* or the empirical self is said to be endowed with *upayoga* (psychic-attention or exertion, conscious attentiveness, function or manifestation of consciousness). This *upayoga*, which is considered as the essential or distinguishing characteristic of *jiva*, is two-fold *darshan upayoga* (intuitive awareness or indistinct, inner feeling or apprehension) and *mana upayoga* (distinct, detailed, determinate, definite or particular knowledge). According to Jainism, the *jiva*, like other substances, is *parinama* (evolvent), not changeless. Hence, each of the two types of *upayoga* is again subdivided into two types *subhava*, i.e. pure, intrinsic, natural, uncontaminated, undefiled state and *ubhava*, i.e. impure, non-natural, apparent, contaminated, defiled condition or state conditioned by bias, prejudice, etc. (NS, 10-14)

Jnana upayoga

In *Niyamsara gatha* 11, *kevala jnana*, i.e. knowledge, pure and natural, is said to be independent of the senses, and *asahaya*, i.e. not needing or requiring any kind of assistance from anyone or anything, such knowledge is *sahara-nana* (*subhava jnana*), i.e. intrinsic nature or essential characteristic of consciousness or soul. *Vibhava jnana* (knowledge which is not of the nature of *subhava jnana*), Kundakunda explains, is of two kinds *samyak-jnana* (right or enlightened knowledge) and *ajnana* (wrong or deluded knowledge) (NS, 11). *Samyak jnana* is of four kinds, while *ajnana* is of three kinds. The indirect knowledge derived from the senses and

the mind (*mati-jnana*), or the scriptures (*shruta-jnana*), and direct knowledge of external objects, events or situations in varying degrees, having reference to *dravya* (subject), *ksetra* (place), *kala* (time) and *bhava* (condition or state), without the assistance of the senses (*avudhi-jnana*) and direct knowledge or experience of another person's internal thought processes, psychic disposition, or mental activity without the assistance of the senses, i.e. telepathy (*manah-pariyaya-jnana*) are considered *samyak-jnana*, if they are preceded or guided by enlightened view or vision, the first three of these four kinds of knowledge are said to be *ajnana*, ignorance or *deluded* knowledge, if they are associated with deluded view, distorted vision, or perverted attitude (NS, 12)

Darshan upayoga

Likewise, of the two kinds of *darshan upayoga*, *svabhava darshan*, i.e. pure and natural self-awareness or intuitive awareness, which is the essential characteristic of consciousness, is said to be independent of the senses, and *asahaya*, i.e. not requiring any kind of assistance from anyone or anything (NS, 13) *Vibhava* (non-natural or defiled) *darshan* is said to be of three kinds: ocular (*chakshu*) (indistinct apprehension or awareness with the help of the eyes), non-ocular (*achakshu*) (indistinct apprehension or awareness resulting from the other four senses and the mind), and *avudhi darshan* (direct apprehension of material objects, without the assistance of the senses and the mind) (NS, 14)

Evolvent nature of the self and matter

Kundakundacharya made the actual application of the doctrine of *parinama* (change or transformation) to the cases of *jiva* (soul) and *pudgala* (matter) and *kala* (time) (*Pravachanasara*, II 37) Soul undergoes transformation by its capacity of sentiency (*chetana shakti*) into various forms of consciousness (*upayogas*) like modes of knowledge, self-awareness, etc. The criteria for judging natural (*svabhava*) and unnatural (*vibhava*) modifications or modes (*pariyaya*) in regard to either external, physical forms (e.g. human, sub-human, etc.) or internal psychic dispositions is whether it is *sva para apeksha* (NS, 14), i.e. resulting from the interaction of two differ-

ent substances, the self and matter, and relative to one another as external, subsidiary cause (*nimitta karana*) and effect, or whether it is *nirpeksha*

Intrinsic nature (*svabhava*) is pure psychic disposition of the self (from the *dravyarthika* or *shuddha naya*), in which other substance does not act at all as an external, subsidiary (*nimitta*) cause and has no role whatsoever. It is devoid of any context (*nirpeksha*), and has no relation whatsoever of any kind with any other substance. Such natural modifications can only be of one kind (i.e. pure)

Interaction between the self and matter

The use of the word "*sva-para apeksa*" is, indeed, very significant. It signifies two types of non-natural (*ubhava*) modifications, internal and external, due to the interaction of the self and matter. These modifications or transformations, in effect, occur within their own respective substances, i.e. the transformation of material objects into physical (*dravya*) *karman* takes place in and through material objects and modification of passionate mental states or psychic dispositions occurs within the self itself. The interaction between the two substances (immaterial self and material *pudgala*), each acting as subsidiary, external cause (*nimitta*) for the other's (*para*) modification is a necessary pre-condition for these modifications to take place. Because of the involvement of other substance in one's own modification, both of these two kinds of modifications are considered non-natural (*ubhava*) modifications.

Upadana and nimitta karana

Thus, when one looks from the point of view of internal self-referential aspect (*nishchaya naya*), which is concerned with the substantial or primary cause (*upadana karana*), for the transformation within the self, the self (*sva*) is held responsible for the passionate mental states of attachment, etc. psychic or *bhava karman*, while the physical or material (*dravya*) *karman* is said to be *para* (other, subsidiary or external cause (*nimitta karana*), from the *vyavahara* (external, other related) viewpoint, of those

deformed, defiled psychic dispositions of attachment, passions, etc mental states (*ubhava parinama*) However, when one considers transformation within matter (*padgala*), the physical (*dravya*) *karman* is *sua* (substantial, primary or internal cause, i.e. *upadana karana*) of the changes in its material conditions, from the *nishchaya* viewpoint, while the defiled, distorted psychic dispositions of attachment, passions, etc (*bhava karman*) is said to be *para* (other, subsidiary, external cause or *namata karana*) of those changes

Concept of *sua-para-apeksa*

In this way the *sua* and *para* interact with one another as cause and effect Therefore, Kundakunda has deliberately and for valid reasons used the words "*sua para apeksa*" (NS, 14), because non-natural (*ubhava*) transformation or modification in either case (*dravya karma* or *bhava karma*) requires the presence of another, different substance and is dependent on the other, external (*namata*) cause, as a conditioning factor, even though in subsidiary capacity Only *subhava* (intrinsic nature), in which there is no *para apeksa*, can be said to be *nirpeksha* That which has *para apeksa* cannot be *subhava* Thus, in *nirpeksha* condition, i.e. the condition or state devoid of any context, conditioning or modification of other, the other external substance has no role or place whatsoever, even as *namata karana* The innate nature of the pure self is totally free from both *dravya karman* and *bhava karman*.

The use of the word "*nirpeksha*" by Kundakunda in *Nyamasara gatha* 14, requires some explanation According to Jainism, no *naya* (standpoint) can be *nirpeksha*,¹⁰ i.e. devoid of some context, every *naya*, as *naya*, representing a particular viewpoint is expressive of a certain context, it is concerned with a particular aspect of an object and grasps or reveals only a part of the totality Even *shuddha naya* is not *nirpeksha*, it is expressive of a pure viewpoint as compared to impure viewpoints It represents an unbound state of the self vis-a-vis bound state of being associated with *karma-upadhi* (i.e. *dravya-karma* and *bhava karma*), and it has *subhava-apeksa* (the point of view of intrinsic nature), as against "*sua para apeksa*", which accounts for internal contamination, within *sua* (self) (*bhava-karma*) and conditioning of *para*

(other), external, material *dravya-karma*

Nirpeksha in NS, 14 refers to the state or condition of intrinsic purity, not to any viewpoint, including *shuddha-naya*. Only the supreme state of self-realisation, the experience of super-sensuous state of Godhood, *sva-atma-anubhuta*, or the *jñāya-bhāva* (pure consciousness) can be said to be *nirpeksha*, beyond all contexts and transcending all standpoints including *shuddha-naya* (*pakṣhatikrānta*, SS, 142) and devoid of all viewpoints (*sarva-nāya-pakṣha rahita*, SS, 144), such as bound and unbound, pure and impure, it is self-sufficient and beyond words. A viewpoint (*nāya*), like language, is similar to a bus ticket valid only for the journey, but once one reaches the destination, it is completely useless and has no relevance.

It is, thus, quite evident that non-natural (*ubhaya*) modifications (*paryaya*) take place in both substances — *jiva* (self) and *pudgala* (material substance). Even though these *ubhaya* modifications take place within the respective substances, in which each substance acts as its own primary, direct, internal or substantial (*upādāna*) cause of its own (*svaka*) modification, the other substance is also necessarily involved or associated as indirect, external, other, subsidiary or auxiliary (*numatta*) cause. This is true only of non-natural (*ubhaya*) modifications, the natural (*svabhāva*) modifications do not require and are, indeed, devoid of any association or involvement of other (*para*) substance in any capacity whatever. For *ubhaya paryaya* of any substance, however, the association (*sanyoga*) and involvement of other substance as *numatta* is a must and for that reason it is said to have *sva para apeksha*.

In other words, the phrase "*sva-para-apeksha*" means that for any non-natural modification, the presence and complicity of *sva* (its own) as well as the association and involvement of other (*para*) substance as *numatta* is necessary, i.e. *sanyoga* (association and involvement) of both *sva* and *para* is required. In the absence of any one of them, the *ubhaya paryaya* (non-natural modification) cannot take place. Without the complicity of the self (*sva*), mere material (*dravya*) karma cannot do any harm. Thus, the real culprit is one's own attachment, passions, etc. mental states, which provide the glue for karmic bondage. Thus, efforts have to be

mainly and primarily directed towards controlling attachment, passions, etc

Self-referential and other referential viewpoints

In the *sua para-apeksha* non-natural (*ubhaya*) modification, *sua* (the internal factor), which acts as *upadana karana* (cause), is considered as the subject of *nishchaya naya*, while *para* (other substance), which plays the role of subsidiary, external cause (*numatta*), belongs to *vyavahara naya*. Accordingly, each substance is said to be *karta* of its own (*svaka*) modification from *nishchaya naya*. For instance, the self is said to be *karta* of attachment, etc. of its own psychic dispositions and physical activities of the body are said to belong to body from *nishchaya naya*. From the *vyavahara* point of view, however, one considers oneself to be the *karta* of other substance. For instance, when one describes the self as the *karta* of the physical activities of the body or asserts that the house or wealth belongs to the self, such statements are made from the *vyavahara* point of view.

The aforesaid discussion makes it clear that *vyavahara naya* is considered to be *para-ashrita* (dependent on the other), or having *para-apeksha*, i.e. where involvement of other exists and in which the role of *numatta* is emphasized or given precedence over *upadana* and statement made is usually *para* (other) oriented. *Nishchaya naya*, on the other hand, is said to be *sua-ashrita* (self-referential), i.e. dependent on *sua* (internal, primary, substantial cause or *atma ashrita*) and in which the role of *upadana* is emphasized and statement is made accordingly.

However, what is called *sua ashrita*, may have association or involvement of other (*para-apeksha*), even though as *numatta*, i.e. in a subsidiary or auxiliary capacity, or it may be *narpeksha*, i.e. devoid of any conditioning, involvement or association of *para*. In the former case, it is called *sua ashrita nishchaya naya*, or *nishchaya naya*, which is *sua-ashrita* with *para apeksha*, while in the latter case it may be said to be *sua-ashrita shuddha naya*, or *shuddha naya*, which is *sua ashrita* and is devoid of *para apeksha* or *sua ashrita* having "*svabhava apeksha*" (the point of view of intrinsic nature), as Pandit Todarmal points out.¹¹ Thus, while *sua para apeksha*, repre-

senting as it does non-natural modification, can be divided into *sua-ashrita* (*nishchaya naya*) and *para-ashrita* (*vyavahara-naya*); *sua ashrita* can be said to be of two kinds *nishchaya-naya*, which involves *para-apeksha*, i.e. representing internal aspect but conditioned or affected by other (*para*), and *shuddha* (pure, *svabhavik*, natural) *naya*, which is devoid of any conditioning of *para*, representing as it does the unconditioned, undefiled, undistorted natural state of a substance

Knowledgeable people in general ask us to look inwards, to peep or introspect into our inner world. But it was, indeed, the unique contribution or insight of Acharya Kundakunda that he drew our attention to the fact that in looking inward we not only encounter our conditioned mind, resulting from the Self's association or interaction with external world and the karmic matter or our emotional, unconscious karmic baggage, stored or hard wired in our synapses or neuro-biological processes in the brain but also discover the true nature of the real self, the soul (pure consciousness), which is unaffected and unconditioned by other, material *karman*.

There are, thus, three *nayas*, viz. *vyavahara naya*, *nishchaya naya*, and *shuddha* (pure) *naya*. From the *vyavahara* (*para ashrita*, external, subsidiary, *namatta* cause) *naya*, the soul (*atma*) is the *karta* (doer) and *bhokta* (enjoyer or experiencer) of *pudgala* (material) karmas, such as physical comforts and sensual pleasures, etc. From the *nishchaya* (internal, *sua ashrita* but conditioned by *para*, i.e. material *karman*), the soul is the *karta* and *bhokta* of its own attachment, passions, etc. *bhavas*, that are the product or result or the Self's interaction or association with material *karman* (NS, 18). From the *shuddha naya*, all living beings are of the same unconditioned, pure nature as liberated souls (*siddha*) (NS, 49). In *Dravya Sangraha* (DS, 8) it is also stated that according to *vyavahara naya*, *jiva* or soul is the *karta* of the *pudgala karmas*, but from *nishchaya naya*, *jiva* is the *karta* of *chetan* (psychic or *bhava*) karmas or mental states and from *shuddha naya*, the *jiva* is the *karta* of *shuddha* (pure, uncontaminated) *bhavas*, i.e. psychic dispositions, or pure aspects of consciousness viz. infinite knowledge, infinite bliss, and infinite vigour)

Non-natural Modifications

Kundakunda is very much concerned about *ubharu*. As is one's *bharu* or *parinama* (psychic disposition, state of consciousness or thought-process), so is one's *parinati* (activity of body, mind and speech). If one's *darshan* (view or attitude) and thought-activity is distorted, deluded or perverted (*ubharu*), all the psychic-attention (*upayoga*), energy, motivation and resources are turned into wrong direction. They do a great deal of harm. That is why Kundakunda lays great stress on avoiding *ubharu*. This is done by affixing "sara" after "nyami" in order to avoid deflection, perversion or distortion (*upareet parihara*) (NS, 3), by emphasizing that *darshan* (view, conviction) has to be *samyaktva*, i.e. enlightened, free from a perverted or deluded view (NS, 51), that knowledge has to be *samyakna* (enlightened knowledge), free from doubt, perversity and vacillation (NS, 51) and if these two are enlightened, conduct will be enlightened, by dividing both *darshan upayoga* and *jnana upayoga*, i.e. intuition and knowledge attributes of consciousness, into *subharu* and *ubharu* (NS, 10-14), and by stating that like *guna* (attributes of consciousness), *pariyaya* (modifications of consciousness) are also divisible into *subharu* and *ubharu* (NS, 15).

The characteristics of intuitional awareness or apprehension (*darshan*) and knowledge (*jnana*) as also all other mental states and attributes of the empirical self are said to be entirely alien to the "pure self". This justifiable denial of the empirical impure attributes to the supreme self is invariably accompanied by the predication of the attributes of pure vision and knowledge which are present in the supreme self after transcending the empirical conditioned nature. Of course, it should not be misunderstood that these properties of intuition and knowledge are similar to the process of perceiving and knowing associated with the empirical ego. In the latter case though the properties are called by the same names, they are crippled and limited by physical karmic conditions, whereas the pure vision and pure knowledge associated with the supreme self are the unconditioned and unlimited manifestation of the supreme self.¹²

The various psychic dispositions of the self, contaminated by

the karmas, are said to be foreign or different substance (*para-dravya*), of different or alien nature (*para-bhava*) and should, therefore, be renounced. The intrinsic nature (pure consciousness of the soul), which is the *antas-tattvam*, i.e. innate essence of the self or *jiva* (*svaka-dravya*), is to be realized (NS, 50). The concept of *upayoga* divisible into *svaka-dravya* or *svaka-bhava* (*svabhava*) and *para-dravya*, *para-svabhava* or *para-bhava* (*ubhava*) aims at self-refinement through self-discipline (*nyam*).

The very term "*dravya*" (substance) in Jainism signifies *dravyatva*, i.e. "that which, whilst it does not forsake its innate nature, is connected with [or characterized by] origination, annihilation, and stability [continuity or permanence] and which possesses qualities [attributes] and modifications" ¹¹ Substances, *jiva* (self) and *pudgala* (matter), are, thus, characterised by permanency in the midst of change, both of these substances are always *parinama* or evolvent, changing entities.

Since the nature of reality is dynamic or *parinamaśheel* (subject to evolution), the attributes (*guna*) and modifications (*paryaya*) of *jiva* (self) must constantly undergo self-evolutions. This evolution is natural (*svabhava*), if it is not affected, influenced or conditioned by alien substance (*para-dravya*), it is distorted and non-natural (*ubhava parinati*) if it is conditioned by other substance of alien nature.

Although *svabhava parinama* (innate purity or pure psychic disposition) and the *ubhava parinati* (distorted, defiled or impure psychic state or disposition) appear to be mutually contradictory traits, opposed to each other, they coexist simultaneously in the same object, i.e. *jiva* or the self, as inalienable characteristics thereof. This is made possible by the peculiar Jain conception of reality (*sat*) or substance (*dravya*) and the doctrine of *anekant*, which forms the cornerstone of Jain philosophical thinking ¹⁴ Jainism holds that *sat* (existing reality) or *dravya* (substance), is characterised by permanency in the midst of change. According to Jainism, *jiva* or the self is not an absolutely changeless (*kevalastha*) entity but is always *parinama* or evolvent. As a result, in spite of its constant change or *parinama* "it keeps up its stability or character as an identical substance in and through its changes or *parinamas*" ¹⁵

The Jaina view of Reality is intimately connected to the Jaina way of life. A substance does develop derivative characters (*ubhava*). However, amidst derivative characters of a substance we do not miss the innate nature of its existence, which is its *svabhava* or *svarupa*. *Tadbhavaropyam nityam*¹⁶, i.e. a *dravya* never leaves or gives up its *svabhava* (nature) and gets transformed into something else. Thus, while some of the destructive (*ghatia*) karmas can create a hindrance to the power of knowledge and intuition, cause limitation and distortion of the faculties and capacities of the soul, and may even be completely obscuring (*sarvaghatin*), they are not able to destroy the basic capacity or essential characteristics of the self completely or totally. Hence the conscious being cannot be reduced to an unconscious entity. The analogy of the sun and cloud is useful here. As there is always some light, though the sun is covered with the dense veil of clouds so the self retains some fragment of its intrinsic purity and enlightened knowledge, though it is covered with the dirt of karma.¹⁷

The intrinsic nature of substance or *jiva* is its *dharma* (*dhammo utthu sahava*, i.e. *svabhava*), it is permanently fixed and is an inalienable part of *dravya*. Any *ubhava paryaya* is a deviation, distortion, limitation, or modification of the intrinsic nature (*svabhava*) of the self and as such it is adventitious, transitory or impermanent. Such deviation can be understood as *jiva* not being established in its nature and signifies distortion of its *gunas* (qualities), viz. *darshan* (inner feeling or intuition or *nirakara upayoga*) and *jñāna* (determinate, verbal, linguistic knowledge or *sakara upayoga*). *Upayoga* may be said to be attentiveness, manifestation, function or operation of consciousness or consciousness in action.

The passions, attachments, aversions, etc. are modifications, distortions, or impurities of *svabhava*. This signifies that the intrinsic nature and qualities of the conscious self, or the spiritual magnificence and glory of the essentially self-luminous reality (the soul), is not actualised or present in the person having impure dispositions. In other words, the self is not established in its own intrinsic nature (*svabhava*).

A person who is ignorant of the true nature of the self because of his erroneous identification with an alien substance, i.e.

body and the senses, develops impure dispositions. He is always prone to mental tensions, which are the result of his passions, desires, likes and dislikes, attachments and aversions. Such a person lacks discriminative insight or an enlightened view (*samyak-darshan*) and, as Acharya Samantabhadra states, is never at peace with himself and always miserable due to "*bhaya kama-rashyo*" ¹⁸ In other words, he is enmeshed in two contradictory thought processes of fear and desire or lust — fear of death and desire of seeking his well-being in gratification of the senses. He is unnecessarily afraid of death, when there is no escaping from it, while he endlessly and mistakenly strives to seek his well-being in enslaving desires, sensual pleasures and passions, etc. ¹⁹ Awareness of the transitory character of passions and attachments, enables one not to cling to objects of transitory nature and impels him to practice equanimity, self-control, etc., thereby realizing the goal of peace, happiness, freedom and self-realization.

Matter (*pudgala*), with its physical, corporeal, non-sentient properties and possessing characteristic *sense* qualities of touch, taste, smell and colour, is quite different substance, alien in nature, as compared to *jiva* or the self, which is a sentient (*chetan*), immaterial conscious entity, yet it does influence our consciousness. The effect of liquor on our consciousness is quite well known.

Pleasure or pain are only the modifications of the consciousness or soul, brought about by nervous impulses, synaptic connections, or thought processes. No external event or object contains either pleasure or pain, although these do tend to become the cause for such impulses. The same event or object affects different persons in different ways, causing pain to some and pleasure to others. Hence, it is the consciousness itself that converts these impulses into pain or pleasure according to its own psychic disposition or state. ²⁰ How change or modifications in the material objects affects the *bhava* or the attitudes of persons because of their intense attachment to them is aptly described by Samantabhadra as follows: "Persons desirous of a pot, a crown and gold become sad, happy and indifferent at the destruction (of the pot) origination (of the crown) and persistence (of gold) on account of their causes" ²¹ The psychological states of sadness

and happiness and indifference or equanimity, though generated in the self, have their causes in the material object existing in the external world. Thus, change in the material objects causes changes in the psychic states or dispositions as well.

When a person, who is ignorant of the true nature of the self (*svabhava*), erroneously identifies himself with the body and the senses (material substances of an alien nature), its psychic dispositions (*bhava*) get tinged, coloured or conditioned by that identification, it accepts the character of its state of evolution. Accordingly, the self develops impure dispositions or distortions (*ubhava parinati*) such as attachment, aversion, passions, etc. These impurities rob the soul of its essential characteristics of peace, happiness, etc. and its intrinsic, pure consciousness and result in deviations, distortions and defilements (*ubhava*) of its innate nature (*svabhava*).

The distortions caused as a result of other substances, the soul becomes conditioned, impure and is unable to exhibit its essential natural attributes. This can be easily understood by the example of fusion of hydrogen with oxygen to form water. The product of combination has different attributes from the basic elements, whose real properties seem to have been suspended, but not annihilated because their separation is marked by the immediate restoration of their natural properties in full. In fact, the elements do possess their full properties even in their impure state and at no time these are lost. Very similar is the case with the soul which exists in combination with the finest form of matter, as a result of which its real attributes, the divine qualities, are not able to manifest themselves. The resultant product, i.e. the impure soul, appears deficient in its true attributes.

However, the inherent attributes of the consciousness, i.e. intuition and knowledge do not leave the soul in any of its states, even though their manifestation may be dimmed or distorted in the impure state.²⁷ Thus, the removal of impurity from the soul must immediately lead to the acquisition of all its suspended divine powers and natural attributes. The intrinsic nature (*svabhava*) is an inalienable part of *dravya* (substance), it never gets transformed into another substance.

Dravya (material) and bhava (psychic) karma

The true nature of the self is different from the qualities and modifications produced by the limiting karmas. The force of karma, which is associated with the embodied self since beginningless time, plays a significant role in the distortion and defilement of the soul. In Jainism, karma is divided into *dravya* (physical) karma and *bhava* (psychic) karmas. Physical (*dravya*) karma comprises karmic particles, which attach themselves to the soul and pollute it. The psychic (*bhava*) karma consists primarily of mental states (passions, etc.) arising out of the activity of mind, speech and body, which causes vibrations in the soul.

Commenting on the mutual determination and interactive nature of these two types of karmas, Nathmal Tatia remarks

The soul is ever changing by its own nature and, in the state of worldly existence, this change is determined by the nature of the karmic matter that is associated with it. The nature of the associated karmic matter (*karma pudgala*) is determined by the nature of the passions (*kasayas*) of the soul and the nature of the passions is determined by the nature of karmic matter. This mutual determination has no beginning in time. The Jainas distinguish between the material *karman* called *dravya karman*, and its spiritual [mental] counterpart called *bhava karman*. The former is also called *avarana* (cover) and the latter *dasha* (defects). The defects are the passions or privations and perversions of the capacities of the soul while the covers are constituted by karmic matter that brings out those privations and perversions. The material *karman* and its spiritual counterpart are mutually related as cause and effect, each of the other.²³

Karma in Jainism is a complex very fine matter which interacts with all embodied souls and causes great changes in them. Karma is something material imperceptible to senses and different from a mere abstract concept, it produces certain conditions in the embodied soul in the same manner as a medical pill does to the

body when it is introduced into the body. The karman envelope is the receptacle for karmic matter and if this matter is understood, in the sense in which New Science has discovered, as both a particle and a wave, then it is easy for us to appreciate the two types of karmic matter which Jainism explains as '*bhava karma*' and '*dravya karma*'. At a grosser level of physical acts, '*dravya karma*' is set in motion resulting in its influx, outflux or neutralization in reference to the embodied soul, and at "a finer level of emotions, urges, impulses without any follow up by actions, i.e. only thoughts, '*bhava*' karma is set similarly in motion. In both, however, the will or the intention is of prime importance" ²⁴

The role of thoughts (the inner feelings, psychic dispositions, intention or will) in setting the process of karmic matter in motion is clearly explained by Kundakunda as follows: "Though an empirical self is always conditioned by an object in the external world, it is not that external object which is the cause of bondage. It is by thought that bondage is caused." The direct cause of bondage is thought and not any external object though it is the cause of thought itself. Then why should external objects be tabooed? It is for the purpose of condemning thoughts based upon the external objects. Thought without the basis of an external object never occurs in the consciousness of the self. If it is possible to have thought without the basis of an external object, then thought corresponding to non-existing object must also appear. In the case of a person born of a real mother you can entertain the thought "I am going to kill her son." But in the case of a barren woman, this thought would be meaningless as there can be no son to her. Hence, it is certain that there can be no thought without a basis in reality. It necessarily follows that condemnation of evil thoughts leads to the condemnation of corresponding objects of reality. For it is only by preventing the cause that the effect can be prevented from occurring.

Could it not be maintained that because the external object is the cause of that cause which produces bondage, therefore the external object is itself the cause of bondage? No, for the real condition of bondage, *adhyatman* (the conation) is lacking. If the external object by itself is capable of producing karmic bond-

age, then it would have identical effect in the case of a saint who moves about with gentleness and caution actuated by the ideal of compassion and mercy and of a hypocrite in the garb of a saint who roams about rough and tough without any carefulness. In that case, both of them must react in the same way in the environment which is common to both. But it is not so. The saint, pure in heart, is untouched by sin though he lives in the same environment as the false and hypocritical ascetic who because of the absence of the purity of thought, is still attached to sensual pleasures and is thus subject to karmic bondage. Hence it is not the environmental object but it is the inner thought that is the cause of bondage.²⁵

According to the Jaina theory of karma, man himself is responsible for his future due to his activities of the mind, speech and body. Jainism, therefore, makes the individual responsible to himself. One makes or mars one's own career. One will not escape from the consequences, good or bad, of one's own activities. The Jaina philosopher holds that the karma is a law which automatically operates and gives its fruits.²⁶ According to the infallible law of karma, no action, positive or negative, goes without a result. As Tulsidas said in the *Ramayana* "*karma pradhan ushva kari rakha, jo jis karahi so tas phal pavi,*" i.e. the whole universe is governed by the law of karma, one has to suffer the consequences of one's actions for as one sows, so one reaps." A. N. Upadhye observes

There is no place for any God to intervene, either to favour or to punish an individual for this or that act of his. If God is admitted in Jainism, he is not a Creator, nor is the Dispenser of favours or punishments. He is just the spiritual ideal, which a man struggles to attain by getting rid of every bit of blemish associated with his *Atman*. Such a philosophical attitude cuts at the very root of an emissary between God and man. Once an individual realizes this, his credulous belief that even if he commits any error God would forgive him through some appeasement disappears, and naturally he tries to evolve for himself a code of morality of the highest type.²⁷

***Jiva* (self) and *ajiva* (non-self)**

A proper understanding of the self (*jiva*) and the non-self (*ajiva*, i.e. *pudgala* or matter), and the interaction between the two is essential for spiritual awakening, comprehending the meaning and purpose of life, identifying the spiritual ideal or setting the goal towards the realisation of which our efforts should be directed. Since Kundakunda has discussed both *jiva* and *ajiva* (non-self) as also their interaction extensively in his earlier work *Panchastikaya*, he has only briefly dealt with them in the first two chapters of *Niyamara*. An understanding of non-living (*ajiva*) is necessary as *jiva* (living being) is always found in this world in association with material form. The *atman* (soul) is an embodied being in some form of life or the other. Human beings are endowed with mental, verbal and physical activities. These generate a sort of inner vibrations which make the *atman* subject to the influx of a subtle variety of material particles, known as *karman* or *karmic matter*,²⁸ which results in the contamination, defilement and the impurities of the soul.

***Tattvarthas* or substances**

According to Jainism, there are six substances (*dravya*), which are said to be *tattvarthas* (INS, 9), i.e. the realities or the fundamental principles of life, all of which have various attributes and modifications. Of these, *jiva* (self), and *pudgala* (matter) are most fundamental. Sentientcy or consciousness is the characteristic of only *jiva*. Both *jiva* and matter are evolvent (*parinama*), i.e. subject to change and modification, they also interact with one another. Because of their interaction and association with one another, they undergo non-natural modifications (*ubhaya parinama*). In the case of the self (*jiva*), *ubhaya parinama* takes the physical forms (external modifications from *vyavahara* viewpoint) of human or sub-human beings and the psychical modifications of its internal dispositions or mental states (inner transformation from *nischaya* viewpoint). Likewise, the internal, non-physical modification of *paramanu* (the subtlest material atom) is in the form of wave, while its external, physical modification is in the form of particle, sub-atomic particles and molecules (*skandha*).

While the role of matter in the *ubharu parinama* of the self is very significant, the other *tattvasthanas* also act as subsidiary or auxiliary cause in that modification. Thus, space not only gives room to the self and matter but also because of the extension in space they are able to closely associate themselves and interact with one another. Time is an indicator of modification (*parinama*). The auxiliary cause of time enables us to experience the change or modification, both in physical forms (from childhood to adulthood, and from adulthood to old age) and mental states (feelings of pleasure and pain, etc.). *Dharma* acts as auxiliary cause in the movement of the self towards higher consciousness or towards its destination of intrinsic purity. *Adharma* is the opposite of *dharma*. It acts as an auxiliary cause for obstructing that movement or progress because it cannot cause any forward movement to reach its destination because it works or operates in opposition to the intrinsic nature of true self.

Impurities of the self

The impurities of the self are of two kinds: external and internal. The external impurities are association of *jiva* (living entity) with physical (*dravya*) karma, karmic matter, or *pudgala* (material) karman (NS, 18), as Kundakunda calls it in *Neyamasastra*, which act as physical veils or cover (*avarana*), that obscure or obstruct soul's natural properties of *darshan* (vision or intuition) and *jñana* (knowledge), and limit the power and effectiveness of the soul. The internal impurities are the spiritual deficiencies, defects or faults (*doshas*),²⁹ described as psychic (*bhava*) karma, arising through the effect of material karma, such as delusion, attachment, aversion and passions, etc. The two types of karma (material or *pudgala dravya* karma and psychic *bhava* karma) are interactive and are mutually related as cause and effect, each of the other.

Ethico-spiritual or axiological viewpoints

Thus, contaminated and bound by the karmas, the embodied, empirical self considers itself to be the doer or agent (*karta*) of material karmas (such as this house or wealth is mine) and the

enjoyer or experiencer (*bhokta*) of pleasure and pain as a result thereof from the *vyavahara naya*. But from the *nishchaya naya*, the soul is the doer or agent as well as experiencer of impure psychic dispositions (*bhava*) of attachment, aversion, passions, etc (NS, 18). From the *shuddha* (pure) *naya* (point of view), all living beings or mundane souls are of the same (pure, unalloyed) nature as liberated souls (*siddha*) (NS, 49), i.e. having the potential of being free from all the defects, shortcomings and weaknesses arising out of karmas.

B D Bhatt has given a list of verses, where the terms *vyavahara-naya* (*v*), *nishchaya naya* (*n*), *shuddha-naya* (*s*) and *paramartha-naya* (*p*) occur in the different works of Kundakunda. In *Niyamsara*, he says, *v* occurs four times (in *gatha* 66, 135, 158, and 163), *n* at two places (NS, 152 and 164), *n* and *v* together in five verses (NS, 18, 29, 54, 55 and 76), while *s* and *v* occur at one place (NS, 49).³⁰ This listing, however, does not in any way help in understanding the true meaning and the nuances of the ethico-spiritual *nayas* (standpoints) of Kundakunda.

In order to properly understand the text of Kundakunda's works, particularly *Niyamsara* and *Samayasara*, it is necessary to have correct understanding of his ethico-spiritual *nayas* (standpoints), viz. *vyavahara*, *nishchaya* and *shuddha* (*paramartha naya* conveys the same meaning) *nayas*, which add a new dimension to the *anekanti* doctrine of the Jains. It is indeed a matter of deep regret that most of the scholars of great repute, both foreign and Indian, of ancient, medieval and modern periods, have failed to clearly distinguish and explain the true sense of Kundakunda in making use of these three, subjective, or axiological (*moolyatmak*, i.e. value based) *nayas* involving the ethical and spiritual criterion of *heya* (what is undesirable or rejectable) and *upadeya* (what is desirable and acceptable).

There could be several reasons for not properly understanding the nature and characteristics of these ethico-spiritual *nayas*. One of the significant reasons appears to be that the scholars somehow thought it necessary to view these three subjective, psycho-spiritual or axiological *nayas* from the perspective or prism of only two *nayas*, *nishchaya* and *vyavahara*, (instead of three as

Kundakunda has done) on the pattern of *dravyarthika naya* (the standpoint of substance) and *paryayarthika naya* (the standpoint of modes or modifications), which are epistemological and metaphysical or *tathyatmaka*, i.e. concerning objective reality of the world. The nature of the objective reality of the Universe is such that it can be viewed simultaneously from the general or universal and particular points of view, i.e. *dravyarthika* and *paryayarthika nayas* respectively.

The nature of subjective reality is such that it cannot be viewed from two *nayas* only, because apart from the external, material reality of the embodied self (*jiva*), as represented by the body, the senses and *dravya manas* (physical mind, i.e. neuro-biological processes of the body, especially brain), there are two aspects of subjective or inner psycho-spiritual reality of the self: (1) the *bhava manas*, i.e. psychic mind (which is the subject matter of psychology) or the mental states of *jiva* (self), such as attachment, aversion, passions, etc., which are psychic in nature, but are affected or conditioned by material objects or neuro-biological processes, undergo modifications and changes arising out of the activity of mind, speech, and body and represent impure psychic dispositions, distortions or defilements (*ubhava panna*) of the soul (consciousness), and (2) the spirit, soul or pure consciousness or pure self, the intrinsic nature (*svabhava*), which is unalloyed, uncontaminated, free from all defilements (*ubhava*). Thus, the external aspects of the self are the domain of *vyavahara* axiological *naya*. The impure mental states or psychic dispositions are the subject matter of *nishchaya naya*, and *shuddha naya* deals with the uncontaminated state of the pure self.

The two objective or *tathyatmaka* viewpoints, i.e. ontological, epistemological or metaphysical *nayas*, viz. *dravyarthika* and *paryayarthika nayas*, correspond to the permanent and changing aspects of reality. This type of comprehension, K. C. Sogani observes, "yields intellectual satisfaction, yet it does not show us the way to spiritual growth, satisfaction and self-realisation. Axiological consciousness is very much different from descriptive consciousness produced by metaphysical curiosity of the human mind."¹¹ Hence, the approach of viewing objective reality through

the perspective of only two *tathyatmaka nayas* does not necessarily hold good in the case of axiological *nayas*, which are concerned with subjective reality existing in the objective world

The above discussion does not mean that there is no relationship between the three axiological *nayas* and the two *tathyatmaka nayas*, which are said to be the "*nayas* of the main stream of Jaina dialectics" These two *nayas* are further subdivided into seven Bansi Dhar Bhatt calls these *nayas* as "standard *nayas*,"³² as these have become very popular These seven *nayas* also include *vyavahara naya*, which belongs to the category of *dravyarthika naya*, it cannot be equated with Kundakunda's ethico-spiritual *vyavahara naya* as it has quite different connotation and meaning than the *vyavahara naya* of the *tathyatmaka* category

To argue that the *nushchaya* and *vyavahara* axiological *nayas*, which play an important role in the works of Kundakunda, especially *Samayasara* and *Niyamsara*, have "no relation to the 'standard *nayas*'," as Bhatt claims, is not correct However, his remark that the relation between the axiological *nayas* and the so-called "standard *nayas*," primarily *dravyarthika* and *pariyarthika nayas*, "has scarcely been studied"³³ seems to be correct Whenever some scholars have tried to give their attention to this aspect, they have generally equated *nushchaya* and *vyavahara* axiological *nayas* with *dravyarthika* and *pariyarthika nayas* respectively, thereby ignoring the separate existence of the third axiological *shuddha naya*, which has been equated, identified and confused with *nushchaya naya* (*shuddha nayah nushchaya nayah*, as Jayasena categorically and confidently stated in his *Tattvaparya urti* commentary on *Samayasara gatha* 11 This has resulted in a great deal of confusion and accounts for the failure to distinguish the three axiological or psycho-spiritual *nayas* correctly and to properly understand the relationship between the two categories of axiological and *tathyatmaka nayas*

This failure is partly due to the fact that scholars had not deemed it necessary to give proper attention to the study of *Niyamsara* in depth A deeper study would have helped in removing the confusion between *shuddha*, *nushchaya* and *vyavahara nayas* and clarifying the relationship between the axiological and *tathyatmaka nayas* Scholars have tended to concentrate primarily

on the three more prominent works of Kundakunda, viz *Panchastakaya*, *Samayasara* and *Pravachanasara* without paying much attention to the study of the *Niyamsara*. Some of the writers while dealing with Kundakunda's works in brief refer only to these so-called more prominent works of Kundakunda and do not even mention the name of *Niyamsara*. There are reasons to believe that the *Niyamsara*, which has been deliberately written in brief, was the last of Kundakunda's works. This is quite evident from the fact that it does not deem it necessary to explain many of the concepts that have been discussed in detail in his earlier works but merely refers to them. Moreover, it clarifies and explains several issues which had remained unclarified in his earlier works.

For instance, *Niyamsara* specifically mentions three *nayas* (*vyavahara*, *nishchaya* and *shuddha naya*) and distinguishes them most clearly. It explains in quite specific terms what he means by *vyavahara charitra* (external, social, moral conduct of one's behaviour), consisting of non-violence, etc. vows, (*vrata*), carefulness (*samiti*) and restraints of mind, speech and body (*gupti*), and *nishchaya charitra* (the discipline undertaken to purify the internal shortcomings, negativities, distortions and defilements of the self), comprising of *pratikraman* (repentance), etc. It also clarifies the confusion caused by some of the *gathas* (verses) in *Samayasara* in regard to *pratikraman*, etc. Both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya charitra* together constitute *samyak charitra* (enlightened conduct), which along with enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge lead to the attainment of the intrinsic purity of the pure soul, which is the focus of *shuddha naya*.

In order to have a proper and correct understanding of Kundakunda's philosophy, it is necessary to study all of his works in their entirety and totality. Moreover, they have to be read in the original and one must on his own, diligently study and comprehend their true and essential meaning and not be led astray by the interpretations of commentators, however dignified they might be. One should never forget Kundakunda's emphatic assertion and his considered and most valued advice to the readers of his works or for that matter any other works "never to abandon critical approach and not to suspend one's own considered judge-

ment in regard to any matter in any circumstances". (*Samayasara, gatha 5*) Respect of elders is good but truth must prevail and have precedence over all other things

In the particular case of Kundakunda's works, the commentaries of persons of such eminence and scholarship as Amrtachandra and Jayasena on *Panchastakaya*, *Samayasara* and *Pravachanasara* and the commentary of Padmaprabhadeva on *Niyamasara* are no doubt of great value and have quite often helped to explain and clarify quite a number of things and issues at certain places, they have, at the same time, created a lot of confusion and misunderstanding about some of the basic issues of Kundakunda's philosophy, especially his axiological *nayas* (view-points)

Confusion regarding ethico-spiritual viewpoints

Jayasena is particularly responsible for the confusion in that regard. Instead of viewing things from the perspective of three psycho-spiritual or ethico-spiritual *nayas*, viz *vaiyakhara*, *nishchaya* and *shuddha nayas*, as Kundakunda desired or intended, the commentators have sought to consider and view things only from the perspective of two *nayas*, viz *vaiyakhara* and *nishchaya nayas*, thereby creating confusion between different *nayas*, particularly *nishchaya naya* and *shuddha naya*, which, in turn, has also resulted in confusion between *vaiyakhara* and *nishchaya nayas*. This confusion has led to a great deal of misunderstandings about the nature of the three components of liberation, viz *samyak-darshan*, *samyak-jnana* and *samyak dharitra*, especially in regard to understanding them properly from both the *vaiyakhara* and *nishchaya* points of view.

Over-awed and influenced by the towering personalities and great scholarship of Amrtachandra and Jayasena, subsequent scholars and saints, even those knowing Prakrit and Sanskrit, have almost blindly followed them in reading and understanding Kundakunda through their commentaries and interpretations with the result that one is reminded of German philosopher Nietzsche's remarks "There are no facts, only interpretations". This remark is especially relevant in regard to the understanding of Kundakunda's philosophy, particularly his ethico-spiritual *nayas*.

This situation has apparently arisen due to several reasons. Kundakunda himself did not give clear cut and unambiguous definitions of his three ethico-spiritual *nayas* in his so-called three prominent works, lack of knowledge of Prakrit on the part of most of the readers and even scholars, the influence of the commentators, and respect for them coupled with the tendency to uncritically accept their statements, and absence of a deep study of all of Kundakunda's works, particularly *Niyamsara*, which seems to have been largely ignored or assigned a secondary place.

***Niyamsara* clarifies various viewpoints**

Niyamsara clarifies the situation in regard to *nishchaya*, etc ethico-spiritual or axiological *nayas* in these words "From the *vjarahara* point of view, the mundane soul is the *karta* (doer) and *bhokta* (enjoyer or experienter of the results) of material (*padgala*) karmas (NS, 18), but from the *nishchaya* point of view the self is the *karta* and *bhokta* of psychic dispositions (*bhavas*) arising due to the effect of karmas" (NS, 18), i.e. the impure *bhavas* or thought activities, such as attachment, aversion, likes, dislikes, passions, etc arising as a result of material (*dravya*) karmas, which are *para dravya* (substance other than the self).

From the *śuddha naya*, "all the living beings of the world are of the same nature as *śuddha*, the liberated souls" (NS, 49), i.e. they have the potential of becoming enlightened souls and realizing the state of pure self or the highest state of Godhood (*Paramatman*), free from all the impurities, external as well as internal. Since the innate nature (*śubhava*) of the soul is considered to be absolutely 100 per cent pure, the impurities or distortions of any kind of the intrinsic nature (*śubhava*), are said to be the result of *karma-upadhi* (NS, 38), i.e. association and conditioning of external, physical (*dravya*) karman and internal, psychic (*bhava*) karman. This clear-cut definition and explanation leaves no confusion between the three ethico-spiritual *nayas*.

Axiological and ontological viewpoints

Clarifying the situation is regard to the relationship between the axiological and *tathyatmaka* (ontological) *nayas* (standpoints),

gatha 19 of *Nyamasara* states that from the *dravyarthika* (substance) point of view, the self is free from all modifications of physical forms (human and sub-human, etc) and mental states (attachment, aversion, etc) But from the *paryayarthika* (modification) viewpoint (all) *jivas* (selves) are *sanghata* or *samyukta* in Sanskrit (joined, united or connected together) with the different modifications (*paryayas*) of physical (sub-human, human, etc) forms as well as psychic or mental states (attachment, passions, etc) of the self

When considered from the ethico-spiritual *nayas*, the external human, sub-human, etc physical forms of the embodied self are external, physical modifications from the *vyaavahara naya*, while the internal psychic dispositions or mental states of attachment, etc in the empirical self are impure psychic modifications from the *nashchaya naya* Although these modifications (*paryayas*), primarily occur in their own respective substances, i.e. the physical forms, changes or organic states are modifications of matter and mental states are modifications of the psychic dispositions of the self, the other substance necessarily acts as subsidiary or auxiliary cause for each other's modifications

There are, thus, two kinds of modifications (1) extrinsic, physical modifications in the form of human, sub-human, etc external states of being (from *vyaavahara naya*), caused by the association of the self with matter, in which *dravya karman* acts as the primary cause and the impure mental states act as subsidiary cause, and (2) internal, psychic modifications of mental states of attachment, aversion, etc (from *nashchaya naya*) of the self, in which the immediately preceding or antecedent psychical state (*bhava karman*) acts as the primary cause (*upadana karana*) and the material karman acts as the subsidiary or auxiliary cause (*namitta karana*) Both these modifications from both *vyaavahara* and *nashchaya nayas* belong to the *paryayarthika-naya*, and not to the *dravyarthika naya*, which is free from these modifications (*paryayas*)

From the perspective of ethico-spiritual *nayas*, both these modifications signify *sua-para apeksa* (NS, 14), i.e. result of interaction of two different substances, immaterial self and matter, and mutually related to one another as cause and effect each

of the other. They are not *nirpeksha*, i.e. free from any association or involvement of other substance. Therefore, the two kinds of *sua-para-apeksha* modifications belong to *vyaivahara* and *nishchaya* *nayas* respectively and not to *shuddha naya*. In this way, the meta-physical *dravyarthika-naya* can be equated with ethico-spiritual *shuddha-naya*.

As a substance per se, the pure self is not the *karta* of the two kinds of *ubharu* (non-natural) modifications, internal and external, and is free from *ubharu* modifications resulting from the interaction of two different substances. In other words, the pure self (from *shuddha-naya*) is neither *karta* nor *bhokta* of the *para-dravya* (other substance, viz. physical, material or *dravya* *karmas*), such as this house or material wealth is mine or that this particular wife or son is mine (as is generally considered from *vyaivahara-naya*, which identifies, relates or attaches self with other, external things) nor the *karta* and *bhokta* of attachment, etc. impure psychic dispositions (psychic or *bharu* *karmas*), (as is usually spoken of from *nishchaya naya*) arising out of material *karmas* or for which the material (*dravya*) *karmas* act as subsidiary cause (*numatta*).

The psychic (*bharu*) karma consists primarily of mental states (passions, etc.) arising out of the activity of mind, speech and body, which cause waves or vibrations in the soul, which attract material karmic particles to the soul and pollute it. The material (*dravya*) *karman*, also called *avarana* (cover), and its spiritual counterpart (*bharu-karman*), also called *dosha* (defects), are "mutually related as cause and effect, each of the other" ³⁴

In the second line of NS *gatha* 19, Kundakunda confirms that the above-mentioned states of mind or psychic dispositions, in which the self wholly identifies or associates itself, either with material objects, including body (different substance) and immaterial (conscious) other persons (different individuals) or with its own impure psychic dispositions (attachment, passions, etc.), are described from *parayarthika* point of view. But from *dravyarthika* viewpoint, the self is free from all such psychic dispositions. Therefore, *dravyarthika naya* can, thus, be equated with *shuddha naya* (point of view), which depicts the unpolluted, undefiled state, without any modification of the pure self. However, there is one

significant difference between the *dravyabhūta* and *śuddha nayas* in that while the former is primarily ontological and metaphysical concept, *śuddha naya* is basically an ethico-spiritual concept.

Heya (rejectable) and *upadeya* (worth realizing)

Since pure consciousness is free from all the defilements, distortions and perversions in the attributes and modifications of the self caused by the *karma upādhi*, the pure soul, i.e. *atma* alone is declared to be *upadeya* (to be realized) for the empirical self while *jīva* (the embodied, contaminated, bound self), etc. *bāhi*, i.e. external (other than one's intrinsic nature) substances are said to be *heya* (undesirable, rejectable) (NS, 38). One's own intrinsic self, i.e. *atma* (soul) is considered *upadeya* because it is free from the *guṇa paryayas*, the impure modifications of its attributes, arising out of *karma upādhi*, association or conditioning of karman (NS, 38). *Pudgala* (physical, material substance, including material karman) and time, space, etc. substances are undoubtedly external from the point of view of the soul. But the description of *jīva* (the mundane self) also as external ("*bāhi*" in Prakrit or "*bāhya*" in Sanskrit) indicates that Kundakunda here intends to make distinction between *atma* (pure soul or pure consciousness) and an embodied self (*jīva*).

The empirical self (*jīva*) in its worldly existence is contaminated by material karman and possesses bio-energy or ten life forces or principles called *prāṇas* (five senses, three energies of mind, body and speech, age or life duration and respiration), which account for its being a living entity. Since the senses, mind and body, etc. are material (*pauḍgalik*), the empirical or mundane self in its worldly existence, whether in the *paryaya* (mode) of man, animal or bird, etc., is considered to be *astikaya* (having extension in space and hence a substance having body). This *jīva* (embodied self) is said to have external material form (*murtatva*) and is, thus, sought to be distinguished from pure consciousness (*atma* or pure self), which is immaterial and free from all the contamination of material and psychic karman (*dravya* and *bhāva karman*).

In *śuddha bhāva* (pure psychic disposition) *adhikāra* (chapter 3

of this work), Kundakunda, in the introductory *gāthā* (NS, 38), of that chapter states that *jīva*, etc (*jīvaḍi*) external (*bāhi*) *tattvas*, categories or principles of life are *beyā* (worth renouncing, abandoning) (NS, 38) It is necessary to understand what Kundakunda means here when he calls *jīva* (living principle) not only *bāhi* but also *beyā* and what he means by *jīva*, etc *tattvas*, i.e. what are other *tattvas*, besides *jīva*, and why they are also considered *bāhi* (external, different, other than *ātma*, i.e. pure consciousness) and *beyā*.

The word "*jīva*" in Jainism is very often used as synonymous to *ātma* (soul), the two words are even used interchangeably. However, *jīva* here refers to the embodied self, which is attached to the corporeal body and hence is conditioned by desire. A distinction, therefore, is made between the contaminated, defiled state of *jīva* and *appa* or *ātma* (pure self). The embodied, empirical self is bound by karmas and regards himself either as the *karta* (doer) and *bhokta* (experiencer) of *para-dravya* (house, etc. material objects and wife, etc. immaterial persons, which are other than one's own self) by identifying himself with other substances (*para-dravya*) or as the *karta* and *bhokta* of impure mental states (*bhavas*) of attachment, etc. by identifying his pure self with anger, etc. impure *bhavas*, which are considered *para-bhava*, i.e. *bhavas* that are other (*para*), and different (*bāhi*) from the intrinsic nature of the pure self, *ātma* or pure consciousness. The *ātma* is considered to be free from *karma-upadhī* (all association, connection, or interaction with karmic matter and any contamination or defilement of soul resulting therefrom) (NS, 38).

A distinction is, thus, made between *jīva* (empirical self), which lives because of ten life principles, forces or vitalities (*prāṇas*), viz. five senses, three bio-energies of body, mind and speech, life duration or age and respiration), and the potentially pure self (*ātma*, soul or pure consciousness). The relation between *jīva* and *ātma* is one of identity-cum-difference.

The reason why the embodied self (*jīva*) is described as *beyā* (to be abandoned) is that the impurities associated with contaminated *jīva*, such as attachment or desire (feeling of mineness, i.e. *mamata* in regard to goods and beings), *abamkāra* (ego), aversion, passions (anger, pride, deceit and greed), are the cause of

mental agitation (*kshobha*, *akulta*) and tension. They rob the individual of its internal peace, happiness and equanimity and are responsible for external behaviour which is prejudicial to social harmony and well-being.

Apart from the *jiva* (the living conscious principle), there are six other fundamental principles of life (called *tattvas* in Jainism). These are also described as *bahn* and *beya*. They are based on the interaction of the self and the non-self (*jiva* and *ajiva*), soul and matter or mind and body as it is called in common parlance and used in ordinary language (the word *mud* does not, however, have the same sense or meaning as the self, soul, *atman* or spirit in Jainism and other Indian tradition). The seven fundamental principles of life are animate beings (*jiva*), inanimate or matter (*ajiva*), influx of material karmic particles, and the accompanying psychic negativities and impurities into the soul (*asrava*), bondage or association of the self with those impurities and karmic matter (*bandha*), stopping of influx of fresh impurities and karmic matter (*samvara*), eradication or dissociation of the already accumulated impurities and karmic matter (*nirjara*) and total absence of impurities and karmic matter, i.e. liberation from all kinds of material or physical (*dravya*) and psychic or mental (*bhava*) karmic impurities and negativities (*moksha*).

These principles of life are called fundamental principles because peace, happiness, and social well-being depend on the correct understanding of these principles, which help in discovering the intrinsic, true nature of the real self or pure consciousness. A discriminating insight (*samyak-darshan*) is necessary to understand the true nature of the self, its interaction with karmic matter and the reality of its present psycho-physical state of embodied existence so that the *jiva* can be on guard against the delusion or infatuation resulting from the identification of the self with the body and the senses. The self should also be aware of the causes of the influx of the karmic matter (*asrava*) and the karmic bondage (*bandha*), in which passions play a significant role, so that it can practice moral and spiritual discipline, including self-restraint, compassion, austerities, etc. which will facilitate *samvara*, *nirjara*, and *moksha* (liberation).³⁵

These seven basic principles of life described above become nine by the inclusion of *puṇya* (*śubha*, auspicious and wholesome) and *papa* (*aśubha*, inauspicious and unwholesome). These nine principles of life (*nava-tattva*), also known as nine categories (*nava-padarthas*), are important because of their relevance for understanding the evolution and condition of the soul in the various stages of its life-history. Of these, the first two (*jīva* and *ajīva*), the self and the non-self, are fundamental categories, while the other seven must be recognised as resultant categories due to the interaction of the first two. In spite of the subsidiary nature of these seven categories, they are equally important as the first two in as much as their knowledge is quite essential to the process of self-development leading to liberation or self-realization which is the highest objective of human endeavour.

Each of the five principles, categories or aspects, arising out of the interaction between *jīva* and *ajīva*, are further divided into physical or material (*dṛavya*) *āsrava*, *bandha*, *samvara*, *māra* and *mokṣa*, etc. and psychic or mental (*bhāva*) *āsrava*, *bandha*, *samvara*, etc. While *dṛavya āsrava*, etc. represent physical, external aspects of the Self's impurities, resulting from its association or interaction with matter (*puṭṭhā*), *bhāva āsrava*, etc. represent psychic, mental, inner or internal aspects of those impurities. Accordingly, the embodied self needs to undertake both external, moral, *vyavahāra dharma* (conduct) or *vratas* (vows), etc. and internal, spiritual, *nishchaya dharma* of *pratikraman* (repentance), etc. as part of *samvara* and *māra* in order to attain *mokṣa* (liberation), which is considered to be the highest objective of human endeavour and, therefore, is said to be *upadeya* (to be realised).

**Why *jīva*, etc. *tattvas* including *mokṣa* are
said to be external and *beyā*?**

What is the basis for Kundakunda's argument (in *gāthā* NS, 38) that *jīva*, etc. external (*bāh or bahya*) *tattvas*, including *samvara*, *māra* and even *mokṣa* (liberation) are *beyā*, i.e. not to be desired or aspired for? They are said to be external and *beyā* because they are different from or other than the intrinsic or essential nature

of soul, and are the product of or conceived in relation to *karma upadhi* (association of *karman*, both material and psychic), and as such, they are infected or imbued with a desire or expectation of *moksha*. Since the path to *moksha* lies in overcoming desire and is typically described as liberation from the inexorable law of *karma*, is not the search for *moksha* — the state where no desires are left — itself an act of desire? This paradox was quite evident to Kundakunda when he described (NS, 38), *jiva*, etc. *tatruus*, including *moksha*, *bahi* or *bahya* and *heya*. Even the desire for *moksha*, it seems, is a form of bondage.

Liberation or *moksha* is a state of desirelessness, which is free from all kinds of bondage. It is self-realization, i.e. realization of the intrinsic purity of consciousness, which is natural and inherent to the soul. It is not to be viewed as a duty, which is prescribed by other and becomes compulsion, or an expectation or desire. Trying to be something that you are not is not possible. The want of *moksha* is no different from any other want that we might have. *Jiva* (the embodied self), feels or views itself in bondage, to be bound by *karmas* (both material and psychic) and, therefore, seeks or desires liberation (*moksha*) from that bondage, *moksha* is, thus, a contrivance or product of *karma upadhi*. But the *atma* (soul or pure consciousness) entertains no desire, or want of anything including that of *moksha* (liberation) because it is essentially pure and free from *karmas*, it only realizes its intrinsic nature, i.e. self-realization, which is inbuilt or inherent therein.

In his commentary of *Samayasara gatha* 13, Acharya Amrtachandra remarks “*kevala jiva ukarashcha punya-papasarvasamuranurjarabandhmoksha lakshanah*.” In other words, the defilement or distortion, or altered state (*ukara*) of *jiva* (self) have the characteristics of *punya* (*shubh* or auspicious or meritorious), *papa* (sinful, *ashubha* or inauspicious, demerit) activities, *asrava*, *samvara*, *nijsara*, *bandha*, and *moksha*. From the perspective of intrinsic purity, the nature of *jiva* is one of pure consciousness (*jnyak bhava*). The defilements and distortions (*ukara*) or non-natural (*ubhava*) modifications of *jiva* are due to its association, involvement or interaction with non-self or matter (*jivasya ukara hetu ajiva*), which necessarily acts as the subsidiary or aux-

iliary cause (*paravatta karanam*) of these distortions and defilements. The reason why *moksha*, etc. *tattvas* (principles or categories) have been described by Kundakunda as *bahn* (external or different) from soul (consciousness) and *heya* (not to be desired) in *Nyayasara* (NS, 38) and *ukara* by Amrtachandra in his commentary on *Samayasara* gatha 13 is to draw our attention to and lay emphasis on the uncontaminated nature of pure consciousness. In this regard, A. Chakravarti points out

These categories though considered as real entities because of their importance in the life-career of the soul, it must not be forgotten, are but the various aspects resulting from the interaction of the fundamental reals, *jiva* and *ajiva*. Recognition of this fact would naturally imply that it is the same unitary self that is present through these categories which are but the modifications of the same self caused by the operation of the non-self *upadhis*. Thus it is possible to eliminate the modifications caused by external conditions since they do not form part of the real nature of the self. Thus, after eliminating all those modifications alien to the nature of the self caused by external conditions, it is possible to contemplate upon the nature of the pure self. Such a realization of the self brought about by the discriminative knowledge of the true nature of the self, as distinct from the operating external conditions, would ultimately reduce the categories which are considered real and important to a status of unreality and unimportance. Such a knowledge of the true self present throughout these categories and yet transcending all these modifications is called *atmakhyati*, knowledge of the self *par excellence*.³⁶

There seems to be several considerations underlying Kundakunda's assertion that *jiva*, etc. *tattvas*, including *moksha*, are *bahn* or *heya*.

- 1 These *tattvas* are the product of interaction between *jiva* (embodied self) and *ajiva* (non-self or matter). In fact, *jiva* itself is the result of association of *maternal karman* (body)

- with consciousness (the intrinsic nature or essential element of *jñā*, i.e. *antah-tatvum*),
- 2 to distinguish *ātma* (soul or core consciousness) from *jñā* (the embodied self),
 - 3 to dissociate this consciousness from all relational aspects or conditioning effects of *karma-upādhi*,
 - 4 to rid consciousness of any trace of desire or attachment to anything, even desire for *moksha*, and
 - 5 to highlight the freedom, independence and significance of the unconditioned, intrinsic and essential nature or psychic state of consciousness (*parināmaka bhāva*) This *bhāva* ensures the possibility of self-realization or salvation

Four of the five *jñā bhāvas* (the psychic, emotional, experiential states or conditions of consciousness), viz the rising (*audāyika* or fruition of karma), suppressing (*aupashamika*), annihilating (*kṣhayika*), and mixed process of partly eradication and partly suppression (*kṣhayopashamika*), are causally connected with or related to physical (*dravya*) karma or *karma upādhi*. But the fifth *parināmaka bhāva* is the intrinsic and essential nature of the self (*jñā*), unconditioned by karmas (both physical and psychic). It is *nirupādhi* character. It is non-relational (*nirpekṣa*), having no causal connection with *samsāra* (world) or *moksha* (salvation) (*moksha* also is a contrivance or product of *karma upādhi*, since it has causal connection with karmas). *Parināmaka bhāva* is *nishkriyā* (inactive) *bhāva* and, according to this *bhāva*, the *Jñā*s may be said to have neither beginning nor end, as spiritual existences they are eternal. Neither are they created nor can they be destroyed. Thus, while the first four *bhāvas* are relational or related to *karma upādhi*, the last one is not related to anything and is unconditioned. It is from this viewpoint that *jñā* etc. *tatvas*, including *samsāra*, *nirjara* and even *moksha* are *bāhi* (external) and *beyā*.

There is not the slightest doubt that *samsāra*, *nirjara* and *moksha* are definitely *upadeya* (to be followed and aspired for) by the empirical, embodied self from the *vyavahāra*, *nishchaya* and *śuddha* points of view, concerned as they are with the purification of the impurities of self, both physical and psychic. But when the self is

established in *Paramatma svarupa* (the intrinsic and essential nature of the self) and attains the state of *siddha* (perfect, liberated, pure soul, and *kṛta-kṛtya*, i.e. nothing else is left for Him to be done or accomplished), he neither has any need or desire for liberation (*moksha*), nor does he need to undertake any efforts by way of practicing rules of moral conduct, such as *vrata* (vows), *samati*, etc from *vijarabara naya* and spiritual discipline of *pratikraman* (repentance), etc from *nishchaya naya* for purification of the soul

Siddhahood (the state of liberated soul) represents the status of *paramatma* (supreme soul), perfect, supreme state of the self, pure state of being, from which there is no fall. Therefore, the various methods, processes and procedures of purification, which are necessarily relevant and most essential in the case of empirical, embodied impure being, have no relevance whatsoever in regard to the already purified (100 per cent pure) beings. To talk or think of *samvara*, *nirjana* or even *moksha* in the case of the pure, perfect soul is unnecessary, undesirable and meaningless. For similar reasons, *pratikraman*, *pratyakhyan*, etc., both physical and psychological (SS, 284), external *garha*, i.e. verbal confession before the master, internal *vanda*, i.e. self-censure, and *prayashchitta*, i.e. expiation, etc., are described in *Samyasara* (SS, 306) as constituting *ushkumbha*, i.e. the pot of poison for those who have *param shuddhata* (supreme purity) as Amrtachandra says, or those who are established in *vetraga charitra* (perfect non-attached conduct) or *nirukalpa shuddha upayoga* (undifferentiated, pure consciousness), as Jayasena states in his commentary in that *gatha*, while *apratikraman* (non-repentance), etc. are said to constitute *amrutkumbha*, i.e. the pot of nectar (SS, 307) for such people, i.e. the pure self. Why and for what purpose a person, who has not committed any fault, misdeed, wrong or sinful act, should undertake repentance (*pratikraman*) Obviously, medicine is meant to be given to a diseased person, not to the perfectly healthy person.³⁷

Prof Chakravarti's remarks in this regard are quite pertinent

In the case of the supremely pure state of the self, to talk of *pratikraman*, etc., is to drag it down to the empirical level and

to postulate the possibility of occurrence of impure emotions which ought to be disciplined and controlled. Hence to talk of *pratīkraman*, etc. in this state will be a positive evil. Hence the revered author considers the various kinds of moral [and spiritual] discipline to be things to be avoided and calls them poison pot. Then what is the significance of the opposite, *apratīkraman*, etc. which are described to constitute the pot of nectar? Here the term *apratīkraman* implies not the mere opposite of *pratīkraman*. The mere opposite of *pratīkraman* would imply removing the disciplinary act and giving free access to the impure emotions towards the focus of attention. That would be positive degradation of the self. Hence this interpretation of the term would be inapplicable to the pure self in the transcendental region. Therefore, the negative prefix in the words *apratīkraman*, etc. must be taken to signify the absence of necessity to practise the discipline. When the self is absorbed in its own pure nature by attaining the yogic *samādhi*, there is a full stop to the series of impure psychic states characteristic of the empirical self. Hence there is no necessity to practise various kinds of discipline. The very absence of those disciplinary practices produces spiritual peace that passes understanding. It is in that stage there is the pot of nectar. Such a spiritual peace necessarily implies spiritual bliss which is the characteristic of the Supreme self.³⁸

In the second part of the first line of NS, *gāthā* 38, Kundakunda has used *appano* (*atman*) and *appa* (*atma*, i.e. soul or pure self) in order to distinguish it from the embodied *jīva*. Only the pure soul (*atma*) is said to be *upadeya*, i.e. to be aspired for and efforts made in the direction of realising the pure, unadulterated, unconditioned state of the self for the good and well-being of *atmanah* (soul). In *Samayasāra gāthā* 55, 11 also the same idea is conveyed when *śuddha naya* is declared to be *bhūtārth*, i.e. aspired for, as it is the goal of human endeavour. Understanding well the position regarding what is to be abandoned (*beyā*) and what is to be owned or accepted (*upadeya*), one should give up all that is distortion or deviation from the true nature of the self.

Pure self is free from *karma-upadhi*

The second line of NS *gāthā* 38 describes the state of the pure self as being absolutely free from all the *guṇa-parityayas*, i.e. the internal and external modifications of attributes and forms, arising out of material, unconscious *karma-upadhi*, i.e. association or conditioning by karman. Externally, it implies the material operative condition constituting the *karma-upadhi*. Internally, it implies the psychic modification in the self caused by the corresponding karmic *upadhi*. Thus, each one of the various categories or principles of life has a two-fold nature, material and psychic, which are designated respectively by the terms "*dravya*" and "*bhāva*." Thus, we have in each case, *dravya purya*, and *bhāva purya*, *dravya asrava* and *bhāva asrava*, etc.³⁹

From the *śuddha nāya* (pure standpoint), the soul is said to be free from all the internal (psychic) modifications of the attributes and external modifications of physical forms arising out of *karmopadhi* (*karma upadhi* in Sanskrit) (NS, 38). This is possible because the self has the potentiality of self-realisation, salvation, liberation or Godhood. The potentiality is due to the unconditioned psychic state or dispositions of pure consciousness (called *parīṇāmika bhāva*). While the other four emotional states or psychic dispositions (*bhāva*), viz. *audārya*, *auṣṭhamika*, *kṣhayopashamika* and *kṣhayika* are the result of the rise or coming into fruition (*udāya*) of karmas, subsidence (*opasham*) of karmas, dissociation-cum-subsidence (*kṣhayopashama*) of karmas and dissociation and destruction (*kṣhaya*) of karmas respectively, the *parīṇāmika bhāva*, i.e. the intrinsic nature of the self, has no relation, association or connection whatsoever with any type, aspect or *upadhi* of karman, i.e. both *dravya* and *bhāva karma* (NS, 40). The perfect self is considered to be free from all the above-mentioned *auṣṭhamika*, etc. four *bhāvas*, including *kṣhayika* (total dissociation, and complete disintegration or destruction of karman from the soul) (NS, 41).

The empirical self is contaminated by the material karman and the impure psychic dispositions of attachment, aversion, passions, etc. because of the erroneous identification of the self with the body, senses and the mind. However, these impure *bhāvas*

(psychic dispositions, the changing states of consciousness or thought activities) are considered as not representative of the intrinsic nature of the self. The purpose behind this assertion is to persuade the self to look within and underneath these dispositions or psychic states and strive to regain the intrinsic purity of the self.

The pure psychic states of the self engenders equanimity. The auspicious (*prashasta* or *shubha*) and inauspicious (*aprasasta* or *ashubha*) psychic dispositions, on the other hand, are said to give rise and lead to attachment and aversion, pleasure and pain, the psychic, emotional agitations (*kshobha*) and never-ending tensions, and result in karmic bondage. Therefore, from the *shuddha naya*, the self should strive to realize, through self-discipline, the intrinsic nature of its pure self (*atmanah atma*, *svaktya shuddha atma*), which is absolutely free from all the attributes and modifications, caused by the *karma upadhi* (the impurities and limitations of karmas) (NS, 38).

Various psychic dispositions (*bhavas*)

In NS *gathas* 39 to 48 of chapter 3, Kundakunda enumerates a large number of (as many as 51 as compared to 29 listed in *Samayasara gathas* 50 to 55) psychic dispositions (attachment, passions, etc.) or unwholesome inclinations, conditions and states of mundane or worldly existence, and non-natural (*ubhava*) modifications of all kinds, including respect and disrespect, feelings of pleasure and pain, birth, old age, disease, death, sorrow, genders of male and female, human or sub-human (animal), etc. forms. All these conditions and *bhavas* (psychic dispositions) are said to have been described from the *vyavahara* point of view (NS, 49).

All of them, Kundakunda states, are concerned with *paradrumam* or *para dravyam* (external, foreign, substance other than the self) or are modifications, i.e. defilements (*para srubhava*, i.e. other than the intrinsic nature of the pure soul) (NS, 50), resulting from the soul's identification with worldly objects or persons and for which foreign substances, including material karman, have acted as subsidiary causes (*namitta*). Hence, they are *beya*, i.e. worth renouncing, while internal principle of pure consciousness (*antas-*

tatvamsa), which is the intrinsic nature or principle of one's own substance, i.e. soul (*sat-draya* or *svaka-draya*), is *upadeya* (worth realizing) (NS, 50).

Reasons for laying emphasis on intrinsic purity

Since *shuddha naya* draws attention to the pure, uncontaminated state of the self, untouched by attachment, aversion and passions, it points to the potential divinity of the empirical self (*jiva*) with a view to inspire him to realize intrinsic purity and enjoy the unalloyed status of pure consciousness, bliss and knowledge. The use of the word "*sobham*" (I am that perfect, pure supreme soul, i.e. *paramatma*) in NS *gathas* 96-98 reminds us that we can achieve self-realization, i.e. salvation by the practice of self-discipline (*nyasa*).

From the standpoint of *shuddha naya*, the self is the doer and enjoyer of its own pure psychic states (*shuddha bhavas*). The enlightened self, which has realized its true nature, manifests the pure aspects, modes or states of consciousness and, thus, is said to be the substantial agent or doer of *shuddha bhavas* (pure thoughts).

The intrinsic attributes of consciousness (*chetana*), the psychic aspects, characteristics or properties of intuition (*darshan*), knowing (*gyana*), feeling (*affection*) and activity (conation, willing or *karma chetna*) persists or continues to exist and reside in the soul even in the liberated state, shining in their full effulgence as infinite vision, infinite knowledge, infinite bliss or happiness and infinite vigour (*ananta chatushtaya*) (NS, 71) and is not extinguished or destroyed.

While in the contaminated state the self indulges in deluded and distorted psychic dispositions (*ubhava parinati*), it does not lose its original condition, i.e. its innate purity; it never leaves or gives up its *svabhava* (innate nature). *Shuddha naya* reminds us of our spiritual magnificence and glory. It prompts the sullied self to behold its spiritual heritage. It endeavours to infuse and instil into our minds the imperativeness of *shuddha bhavas* (pure psychic dispositions) after abundantly showing us the empirical and evanescent or transitory character of *shubha* (auspicious) and *ashubha* (inauspicious) *bhavas* (psychic dispositions) that bind the

soul to mundane existence. It does not assert that the soul is at present perfect but simply affirms that the self ought to realize or regain the true or pure nature of self. It has the force of 'ought' and not of 'is', and this force is valid for empirical selves.⁴⁰

That every living being has the potential of becoming *siddha* (liberated soul) and attaining self-realization or salvation, as they have the same intrinsic nature as liberated souls from the *śuddha* pure point of view, is emphatically asserted in *Nṛsīṃhāra gāthā* 49. According to the *Samāyāsāra* (SS, 14), the self, from *śuddha* viewpoint, perceives the soul as not bound (by karmic matter), untouched, i.e. uncontaminated by it (*karman*) in spite of its association with matter, it retains its pristine purity, as a lotus leaf in water remains untouched by it, not other than itself, i.e. retains its identity like clay or gold even when they are shaped into different forms, steady, i.e. unperturbed just as the light house in the sea remains steady in spite of the disturbance caused on the surface by the waves, without any difference, i.e. retaining its undifferentiated consciousness, in spite of having its attributes like intuition, knowledge, etc. and not combined or united with adventitious thought activities such as attachment, aversion, etc., i.e. retaining its true nature.

The pure self or soul is said to be free from all defects, including external and internal *paṅgraha* (possession of external goods or worldly objects and mental belongingness or feeling of mineness, i.e. *mamata bhāva*, with regard to material things), attachment, blemishes and passions (anger, pride, deceit, lust or greed), etc. (NS, 44). It is also devoid of taste, colour and smell, without sound, not amenable to sense-perception or inferential knowledge, not cognizable or comprehensible by any outward or external sign, without any material or bodily shape and having *chetana* (consciousness) as its distinguishing characteristic (NS, 46, also SS, 49). Again, just like liberated souls, the mundane souls are free from oldness, death and birth (NS, 47), indestructible, bodiless, supersensuous, devoid of karmic filth and pure self from the *śuddha* point of view (NS, 48).

There are several reasons and benefits of laying emphasis on *śuddha nṛya*.

- 1 It reminds us of the magnificence of our spiritual consciousness apart from our physical, mental, emotional, and intellectual consciousness
2. It provides inspiration, in describing the pure nature of the self, it arouses an ethical and spiritual awakening in the aspirant
- 3 It sets the goal, objective, destination and direction
- 4 It ensures that external self-restraint or moral conduct and internal self-discipline are to be geared in that direction
- 5 It teaches that one should not stop in the mid way and remain stuck there
- 6 It points out that one should not swerve, deviate or go astray from the chosen, correct path
- 7 It accounts for positive outlook and constructive approach
- 8 It asks us to look toward pure consciousness (*mayaka bhava*) rather than impurities of the soul
- 9 It instils self-confidence, since impurities and negativities are of our own making, we alone can undo that
- 10 It draws our attention towards inner peace and happiness and away from indulgence in sensual pleasures
- 11 It asks us to distinguish pure self from not only material karman, worldly objects and body etc , but also from psychic (*bhava*) karman and mental states of impure thoughts
- 12 It lays greater emphasis on the purity of internal, psychic dispositions (*bhavas*) than on external activities, rituals, gender or *vesha* or *linga*, i.e. wearing of yellow robes or nakedness, etc
- 13 It points to the great significance of independence and self-reliance, rather than on grace of any God or person

Although there are many benefits of laying emphasis on *shuddha* viewpoint, it should be kept in mind that merely repeating *shuddham* (I am pure) or *aham brahmasmi* (I am brahman, supreme

Being) will not alone lead to the achievement of the objective. One has to work strenuously, to work hard towards the purification of the soul by getting rid of the detilements, weaknesses and limitations of the self. Accordingly, after describing the characteristic features, traits or qualities of *shuddha atma* (pure self), enumerated in *gathas* 38 to 46, and the ideal, goal or objective of enlightened self, Godhood (*paramatman*) (supreme soul) or liberated soul, Kundakunda proceeds to describe the means to realize that objective, viz. enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct. These represent the three aspects of consciousness, viz. the affective or emotional, cognitive and conative, willing or activity, which are also recognized in psychology, the science concerned with psyche or mind.

Path to Salvation

These three means of attaining salvation are also recognized in Hinduism and given the names of *bhakti* (devotion) *marg* (means), *jnana* (knowledge) *marg* and *karma* (action) *marg*. Although on the face of it, they seem to appear similar to Jainism, there are significant differences between the two approaches. Firstly, in Hinduism, it is said that one can attain salvation by following any one of the three *marg* (means), in Jainism not any one of these three but all the three together constitute the *marg* (means) to attain liberation, they are not three different or separate *moksha marga*. Secondly, *bhakti* of Hinduism is primarily anchored or based on the efficacy of surrender to God or God's grace, which has no place whatsoever in Jainism.

Great emphasis is laid in Jainism on independence and self-reliance and even when worship of enlightened souls is prescribed it is because they are considered as ideals and models and because one wants to emulate their qualities and follow the path they have traversed. Moreover, *samyak-darshan* (enlightened view) of Jains consists of not only dedication and devotion to the cause but also direction, clarity of vision, and "outlook" or "orientation," dynamism, motivation, enthusiasm and commitment, i.e. a "transforming vision or *Weltanschauung*, or something similar" ⁴¹. There are also significant differences between the *jnana-marg* and

karma marg of the Hindus and *samyak jnana* and *samyak-dharitra* of Jains (explained in later part of this introduction)

Each of the three constituents of *moksha-marg*, viz. *samyak-darshan*, *samyak-jnana* and *samyak-dharitra*, can be described from both *vyavahara* (external, outer, *para*, i.e. other-referential, *para-ashrita*, i.e. dependent on other or in relation to other, social, practical, moral, etc.) and *nishchaya* (internal, inner, *sua*, i.e. self-oriented or self-referential, *sua-ashrita*, i.e. primarily dependent on the self or in relation to the self) standpoints (*naya*). But from the *shuddha* or *paramartha* (pure, substantial, non-differential, indivisible identity and unity, *sua-ashrita nirpeksha*, i.e. devoid of any *apeksha* or relation, involvement or association of *para* (other) or any material *upadhi* condition) *naya* (standpoint), the three attributes or characteristics of *darshan* (intuitive), *jnana* (cognitive), and *dharitra* (conative, activity) are merely different aspects of consciousness and cannot exist independently of the substance (self, *atma* or soul). Likewise, *moksha-marga* (the path of liberation) of the nomenclature of *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* are not two separate or different paths to salvation, there is only one *moksha-marg*, which has been described in two different ways and in which *vyavahara moksha-marg* acts as the auxiliary or supporting cause of internal purification.

The substance, according to Jainism, also cannot exist independently of attributes or characteristics (*guna pariyayavat-dharmam*,⁴² i.e. the substance is endowed with attributes and accompanied by modifications). Accordingly, the three characteristics of *darshan*, *jnana* and *dharitra* are, thus, only verbal differentiations employed to explain and communicate to others the complex nature of the unitary self (*Samayasara*, SS, 7)⁴³ The point that the attributes can only be differentiated verbally from the substance is illustrated by Jayasena in the following manner: 'We may speak of fire that it burns, that it cooks or that it shines, when we consider the various purposes for which it is employed. Burning, cooking and shining are spoken of as the various properties of fire, because of its relation to other things, based upon different purposes. In spite of the various descriptions of its properties, fire is one and the same. Similarly the self is one indivisible identity and unity in

spite of the various descriptions of its nature in terms of *darshan*, *jñāna* and *charitra* ⁴⁴

In *Nṛsīṃsāra*, Kundakunda specifically distinguishes *vyavahara naya charitra* (conduct from *vyavahara naya*) and *nishchaya-naya charitra* (conduct from *nishchaya-naya*) (NS, 55). Moreover, he considers and emphasizes that each of the two aspects (external and internal) of conduct are, in fact, *tapas dhanan* (observance of austerities from *vyavahara* and *nishchaya nayas*) (NS, 55). The enlightened conduct (*samyak charitra*) consists of control of one's external activities of body, speech, etc (i.e. *vyavahara charitra*) and internal activities of attachment, passions etc (i.e. *nishchaya charitra*) (*Dravya Sangraha*) (DS, 46). The *vyavahara* conduct, consisting of five vows (*vrata*), five *samiti* (carefulnesses) and three *guptis* (control of external activities of body, speech and mind) is described in chapter 4 (NS *gathas* 56 to 68) and *nishchaya charitra*, comprising of control of internal aspects of mind, speech and body (NS, 69-70) and *pratikeraman* (repentance), etc is explained in detail in chapters 5 to 11 (NS, 77-158).

While enlightened conduct is clearly distinguished as *vyavahara* conduct and *nishchaya* conduct in *Nṛsīṃsāra*, enlightened vision (*samyak darshan*) and enlightened knowledge (*samyak jñāna*) are not so specifically designated by name as *vyavahara* and *nishchaya*. However, it seems that *samyak darshan* and *samyak jñāna*, which have been dealt with in earlier pages of this introduction while discussing *gathas* 5 and 10-14 respectively, have obviously been described from *vyavahara* point of view (*naya*), as those are concerned with external, outer aspects or subsidiary, auxiliary causes (*varanatta*) of enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge, while the description of enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge from *nishchaya naya* is contained in *Nṛsīṃsāra gathas* 51 and 52.

***Samyak-darshan* (Enlightened View)**

In *Nṛsīṃsāra gatha* 51, Kundakunda states that *samyaktva* (enlightened vision) is devoid of *uparacet abhinivesha* (*mithyatva*, i.e. perverted, deluded, one-sided, biased, incorrect view of Reality), which accounts for indiscriminate clinging to a wrong or

deluded view due to attachment, aversion, etc. As a result, a deluded person has body-alone sense, identifies the self with the body, the senses, passions and external things, has perverse and negative attitude and remains engrossed in utter selfishness, intense attachment to worldly objects and gratification of senses. Such a deluded person is completely ignorant of the true nature of the self. A person endowed with *samyaktva*, on the other hand, is firmly established in the self and has firm conviction (*shraddha*) that he is a sentient being, endowed with consciousness, quite distinct from the material body, the senses and the mind. It is, therefore, the duty of the soul to relinquish attachment to the external objects and pursue its own nature, since every soul, from the point of view of its innate nature and inherent purity, is *Siddha* itself (NS, 49).

The external subsidiary causes of obtaining *samyaktva*, from *vijaruhara naya* are said to be the study of scriptures or the instruction of persons who are well-versed in them and have experienced the divine within themselves. The internal cause, from *nashchaya naya*, is the destruction, destruction-cum-subsidence or subsidence of view-deluding (*darshan moha*) karma (NS, 53) and the most intense type of passions. The view-deluding karmas are of three kinds: (1) *mithyatva* (completely deluded view). The soul is unable to distinguish between beneficial and harmful attitudes to life, (2) *samyak mithyatva* or *nashma mohaniya* (when enlightened and deluded views are mixed and there is a kind of oscillation between them). The soul has purged itself only partially of delusion, and (3) *samyaktva karma* (near-perfect enlightened view). Suppression of view-deluding karma results in an enlightened view which is imperfect or incomplete because it only lasts only for a short while and is destined to reappear.⁴⁵

Vijaruhara samyak darshan, as represented by *apta agam tattvanam shraddhanam* (NS, 5), i.e. reverence of enlightened souls and verbal understanding of the *tattvas*, i.e. *jiva* (self), non-self and other categories, aspects or principles of life, including influx of negativities of passions, etc., on the basis of what is written in *agam* (scriptures) but without critical examination and proper understanding thereof or grasping the true nature of the self and

other *tattvas*, may be said to be mere external, subsidiary cause (*namata matra*) of *samyak-darshan*. But as Amrtachandra states in his commentary on *Pravachanasara* (*gatha* III 39,) that even knowing the scriptures completely and having conviction (*śmaddha*) in regard to *tattvas* (the principles and categories) and self-restraint, when destitute of the basic understanding of the true nature of the self, is ineffective ⁴⁶

Accordingly, Kundakunda lays great emphasis on *nishchaya samyak-darshan*, which is characterised by conviction in regard to the absence of *upareet-abhinivesha*, i.e. *mithyatva* or deluded view which accounts for indiscriminate clinging to a wrong view due to attachment, delusion, etc (NS, 51) The use of the word “*eva*” (alone or only) with “*śmaddha*” (conviction) regarding the absence of deluded or perverted view in the *gatha* signifies that Kundakunda attaches utmost or greatest importance to *nishchaya samyak darshan* as compared to *vyavahara samyak-darshan*, as no such word is used in NS, 5 dealing with *vyavahara samyak-tva*. The deluded view (*mithyatva*) keeps a person oblivious and misguided in regard to the understanding of the true nature of the Self. It is also the primary and internal cause (*upadana karana*) of passions and perverse and negative attitude in life that accounts for identification of self with the body, (*deha-ashrita*, instead of *atma ashrita*), and intense attachment to worldly objects and sensual pleasures. Therefore, the first step in the direction of sanity and *nishchaya samyak darshan* (enlightened view) is to control one's likes and dislikes, i.e. attachment (*raga*) and aversion (*dvesha*) or passions

Enlightened Knowledge

Like enlightened view and enlightened conduct, enlightened knowledge is also divided into *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* categories. Kundakunda states that the knowledge derived with the help of the senses and the mind, which are conditioned or contaminated by material karman, or through the books (NS, 12) written by others, howsoever intelligent or knowledgeable they might be, is *para ashrita* (dependent on other), external, *vyavahara* enlightened

knowledge (*samyak-jñāna*) It is not effective unless it is supplemented, complemented or supported by one's own rational thinking, inner reflection and personal experience Truth must first be lived, before it can be possessed. Dependence on someone else may lead to deluded or one-sided viewpoint Kundakunda, therefore, points out that *nishchaya samyak-jñāna* or enlightened knowledge (one's own experiential knowledge arrived after mature consideration and inner reflection) is devoid of or free from *sandehya* (doubt), *umpha* (perversity, delusion or infatuation), and *ubhama* (confusion, vacillation, or not having proper or balanced understanding of different standpoints and their respective contexts) (NS, 51)

People are easily led astray by the views of others and they tend to take the printed word for granted They are most susceptible to blindly accept and follow the books, particularly scriptures of their own religion or sect, which are written by highly respected religious teachers There is, thus, an in-built, obvious bias in favour of one's own inherited, traditional views and books and prejudice against other religions or views of other sects and books Moreover, since the *shastras* and scriptures of even the same sect are written by different authors having different background and intellectual calibre, at different times, in different circumstances, there are often significant divergences in the views that are expressed This creates confusion and vacillation in one's mind and people are seen holding or subscribing to one-sided views It is, indeed, a matter of deep regret that even very intelligent scholars of great repute have not been able to properly describe, explain and clarify the real meaning, true sense or implication (*uruksha*) of Kundakunda's ethico-spiritual or axiological standpoints Pandit Todarmal had to devote one full chapter (chapter 7) of his magnum opus, *Moksha marg Prakashak*, to refute the deluded one-sided views of those who believed in either *nishchaya naya* only or *vyaavahara-naya* alone

Nishchaya samyak jñāna also helps in knowing which ones of the various *tattvas* (categories or principles of life) are *heya* (harmful, discardable, or rejectable) and which ones are *upadeya* (beneficial, acceptable, desirable or worth realizing) (NS, 52) Therefore,

nishchaya samyak-jnana should necessarily have freedom from delusion or infatuation (*ramoha* or *mithyatva*) and be accompanied by discriminative insight of right choice in regard to choosing or selecting the beneficial *tattvas*, viz. *samvara* (self-restraint), *niyama* (austerities) and *moksha* (liberation) and discarding or rejecting *asrava* (influx of karmas or association with negativities of attachment, aversion and passions, etc.) and *bandha* (bondage of both kinds, viz. *dravya bandh*, i.e. physical, material karmic bondage and *bhava bandha*, i.e. bondage of negative thoughts or psychic dispositions of attachment, aversion and passions, etc.)

That absence of delusion and presence of discriminative intuitive insight, which are inalienable characteristics of *samyak darshan*, also form essential constituent parts of *samyak jnana* amply confirms that without *samyak-darshan* (enlightened view), neither knowledge nor conduct can be *samyak*, i.e. enlightened. Samantabhadra's statement that even slight knowledge causes *moksha* in the case of one who is free from delusion (*moha* or *mithyatva*)⁴⁷ and that the attainment and non-attainment of *moksha* depends not on the (total or partial) cessation and non-cessation of ignorance (*ajnana*) but on the (total) elimination and non-elimination of the delusion-causing karmas,⁴⁸ further proves not only the intimate relationship between *samyak darshan* and *samyak-jnana* but also the fact that *samyak darshan* is the cause and *samyak jnana* is its effect. Enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct — the unity of the three constitutes the path of liberation. If one does not practise them, one is likely to indulge in distorted or deluded activities of mind, body and intellect. In other words, such a person would tend to be necessarily carried away by perverse, deluded vision or world view, distorted knowledge of the nature of things or objects, and misguided activities based on likes and dislikes, attachment, aversion and passions.

Vyavahara Charitra

From *vyavahara naya*, conduct (*charitra*) consists in observing

five ethical vows or *vratas* (non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, sex-fidelity and limitation of wants and possessions), the five *samati* or carefulnesses (in walking, speaking, taking food, in receiving, lifting, putting and handling of things, and in disposing excrements, stools, urine, waste products, etc.), and *gāṭhā*, i.e. three restraints of mind, body and speech. All these rules of moral conduct (*vyavahāra cāritra*) are precisely defined in brief and concise manner (one *gāṭhā* for each rule of conduct) in *gāṭhās* 56 to 70 of the work.

While the commentator of *Nīyamsāra*, Pādmaprabhdeva, has included NS *gāṭhās* 56 to 70 under Chapter 4 entitled "*Vyavahāra Cāritra*," in his scheme of chapterisation, Kundakunda states in NS, 76 that the contemplations (*bhāvanā*) contained in NS *gāṭhās* 56 to 70 constitute conduct from the *vyavahāra* viewpoint. According to Kundakunda, this signifies that external moral conduct in relation to others has to be accompanied with internal contemplations, i.e. based on inner conviction or internalised *Vyavahāra cāritra* cannot be divorced from internal *bhāvas*, psychic dispositions or mental states. One cannot cause external injury to others unless his mind is infected by vengeance, aversion or passion of anger. The *bhāva* (the psychic disposition) or *parinām* (internal state of mind) constitutes the primary criteria of judging whether an act of *himsa* (violence) has been committed or not.

Five vows (*vratas*)

Thus, the first vow of *ahimsa* (non-violence or non-injury) is said to be psychic disposition or exertion (*parinām*) free from (all) undertakings and activities injurious to any living being of any type or genre in any way (NS, 56). In *Pravachanasāra*, Kundakunda defines *ahimsa* as follows: "*maradu va jiyadu va jīva ayadacharasya nuchhida himsa, payadasya natthi bandho himsamettera samadassa*"⁴⁹ In other words "Let the creature die or live, on the part of the careless one the act of hurting is certain. by the mere fact of hurt he who is careful in his observances incurs no bondage." Commenting on the above *gāṭhā*, Acharya Amrtachandra remarks

Impure psychic-attention is negligence, the taking of another's life is external. Whether the taking of another being's life occurs or does not occur, to the actual impure psychic-attention, proved by the careless conduct, which does not occur without it, the nature of hurting certainly belongs, and to the non-existence of impure psychic-attention, proved by the careful conduct, which occurs without it, the nature of hurting certainly does not belong, as is shown by the fact that the taking of another's life does not involve bondage therefore internal negligence is the more serious, and not the external. Even so, the external should be recognized, simply as being an occasion for the internal negligence ⁵⁰

Since existence of impure psychic-attention, proved by careless behaviour, which does not occur without it, is hurtful, inasmuch as bondage is known to result from the cause of taking the life of the six classes of bodies, and since non-existence of impure psychic-attention, proved by careful behaviour, which occurs without it, is non-hurtful — for, inasmuch as it has not the slightest bondage resulting from the “other,” it is known to be like a lotus luxuriating in the water, without assail — for these reasons internal negligence, which has the form of impure psychic-attention, must be rejected in all cases where external negligence, in the form of taking another being's life, which is merely occasion of internal negligence, is entirely rejected ⁵¹

Amṛtachandra states that the material vitalities (*dravya prana*) of “the other” are sometimes injured and sometimes not, but (always) the soul binds (itself with) karmas, through being impassioned, causing injury to the subjective *pranas* (*bhava prana*) of itself ⁵²

Amṛtachandra further explains “*apradurbhava kehalu ragachanam bharati hinsa iti, tesham eva utpatti hinsa iti*”, i.e., violence is the result of the psychical disposition or appearance of thoughts and feelings of attachment, passions, etc while non-appearance of these is assuredly *ahimsa*. Thus, *himsa* exists wherever *raga* (attachment) and *dvesha* (aversion) occur even though no creature is

injured or perishes. In other words, the emergence of passions, such as attachment, etc., is violence (*himsa*), even though no creature is killed, while the non-emergence of passions is non-violence. He adds "This indeed is the summary of Jain scriptures or the essence of the teachings of *Jina* in brief."⁵³

The second vow of truthfulness consists in renouncing mental activity (*parmanā*) leading to falsehoods resulting from attachment and aversion or delusion (NS, 53). The third vow of non-stealing means renunciation of the psychic disposition (*bhava*) of picking up articles belonging to others, lying in a village, a town or city or a forest (NS, 58). He, who, after seeing the *rūpa* (face, features, shape or beauty) of a woman either in person or through picture, does not entertain any thought or desire (*vanchha bhava*) for her and remains free from any psychic inclination (*parmanā*) of sex craving is said to observe the fourth vow of *brahmacharya* (chastity or sex fidelity) (NS, 59).

He, who, being imbued with psychic or mental contemplation or inward thought (*bhavana*) devoid of any consideration, regard, expectation or desire (*nirpeksha*), renounces all (*samastā*) *ganthanam* (*ganthi* in Sanskrit), i.e. attachment of all kinds, is said to observe the fifth vow of renunciation of attachment or limitation of wants and possessions (*parigraha tyaga*) (NS, 60). The use of the word "*ganthanam*" or "*ganthi*" is, indeed quite significant. It denotes that attachment to external objects, or possessions is binding, entrapping, enslaving, clinging, or clutching of the soul from all sides by *para* (other) objects or things. *Parigraha* consists of two terms: "*pari*" and "*graha*". "*Pari*" means round, round about, abundant, rich or fullness, while "*graha*", i.e. "*grahana*", means to take hold of, to accept, to receive or to possess something. *Parigraha*, thus, has two dimensions: the inner dimension or subjective side consists of attachment, *askti* or *mucchha*, while the outer dimension or objective side is made up of material goods and external possessions. The two dimensions are inter-twined and imply a state of mind, an attitude and a way of life. *Aparigraha* means limitation of both wants or desires (*ichchha parimāna*) and possessions. This definition of *aparigraha* is realistic, scientific and quite comprehensive since it embodies the en-

ture connotation signified by the term. It believes, in the first place, that those who have the least vestige of a feeling of attachment, notwithstanding the external renunciation of all worldly acquisitions, are far from non-acquisition. Secondly, it expresses that the possession of external things is not possible without internal attachment. Thus, both the internal attachment and the possession of external things come within the sweep of *pangraha*.

Vyavahara dhantra (conduct), consisting of five vows, emphasizes the social aspect of moral teaching, since conduct has significance only in man's relation with others, and refers to the correctness of man's dealings with the rest of the world. *Ahimsa*, etc. rules of moral conduct are ethico-social values, that give importance to the outward behaviour of human beings which is considered socially valuable. The outward (external), *ahimsa* in social intercourse from *vyavahara naya* and the inward (internal), spiritual *ahimsa* from *nishchaya naya*, influence each other and are complementary. One without the other is incomplete. Although in most cases the internal precedes the external, he, who exclusively emphasizes the internal at the expense of the external, Soganu observes, "forgets the significance of outward behaviour. He loses sight of the fact that the impiousness of external actions necessarily leads to the pollution of the internal mind, thus disfiguring both the aspects, namely, the internal and the external. In consequence, both internal [*nishchaya*] and external [*vyavahara*] aspects should occupy their due places."⁵⁴ External social conduct (*vyavahara dhantra*) is reflective of inner thoughts and feelings, righteousness does not take root or germinate in a mind infected by passions.

Five carefulness (*samiti*)

Discussing five-fold carefulness (*samiti*), Kundakunda states that he, who walks carefully on the path without injuring or harming any living being, including himself, is said to observe *irya samiti* (carefulness in walking) (NS, 61). Carefulness in speech (*bhasa samiti*) consists in speaking what is beneficial to and serves the good of oneself as well as others (*saparthadam* or *sua para hitam* in Sanskrit), which is devoid of back-biting, ridicule and harsh

words, and which avoids condemnation, censure, blaming or talking ill of others (*para-mnda*) and indulgence in self-praise (NS, 62). In other words, the three criteria of speaking or the three yardsticks/things one should observe in speaking are that it should be *hita kari* (beneficial to others), *mata* (brief, concise, to the point) and *prya*, i.e. not harsh or condemnatory of others. As Kabir said "*ausi vani bolrye, man ka aapa kboye, auran ko shital keare aapahu sheetal hoye*," i.e. speak in such language that it is free from egoistic or selfish motives and is devoid of self-praise. It should be cool and refreshing to others as well as to oneself.

He, who takes the food in moderation, given by others, which is wholesome and pure, i.e. free from animate food, and which is not prepared especially for him, at his command or request or by obtaining his consent (*kriya-karita-anamodana*). He takes such food with calmness and equanimity (*sama bhava*), i.e. irrespective of whether or not the said food is tasty or to one's liking or not. Such a person is said to observe the *eshana samiti* (carefulness in eating or taking food) (NS, 63).

The psychic disposition and activity or internal mental state (*parivram*) of observing carefulness in picking up and putting down things, such as books, jug, etc. is considered *adana nikhshepana samiti* (carefulness in handling, i.e. lifting and laying down, things) (NS, 64). Carefulness in disposing excrements, stools, urine, etc. in proper place and in such manner as would cause no harm to living beings and avoid inconvenience to others, is described as *pratishthapana samiti* (NS, 65). This *samiti* helps to maintain cleanliness and prevent infectitious and other diseases, thereby promoting the health and well-being of all beings.

Three restraints (*gupti*)

According to Kundakunda, the three restraints (*gupti*) of mind, speech and body are aimed at protecting a person from sinful activities and purifying the self of all its impurities from both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* viewpoints. Restraint of mind (*mano-gupti*) from *vyavahara-naya*, he states, consists of *panhara* (i.e. leaving, removing, avoiding or abandoning) of sinful or defiled, delusive or infatuation, instinctive (*sanyata*), attachment, aversion, etc. un-

wholesome or inauspicious thoughts

While in NS *gatha* 66, Kundakunda has spoken of removing attachment, etc mental impurities within the context or preview of inauspicious (*asubh* or *ashubha* in Sanskrit) thoughts or mental states (*bhavas*), in NS *gatha* 69, he talks of *nirvrtti*, i.e. refraining, abstaining, stopping or discontinuing completely attachment, etc impurities from the mind as *mano-gupti* (restraint of mind). Obviously, restraint of mind in NS, 69 seems to be of stricter kind, since attachments etc are not qualified by the words "*asubha*" (*ashubha*) "*bhavas*" (inauspicious thoughts), and therefore, seems to include both inauspicious and auspicious thoughts among deviations from intrinsic purity of the soul. Although NS *gatha* 69 does not specifically mention *nishchaya naya*, but the absence of *vyavahara naya*, the explanation of *mano-gupti* again after finishing the description of three restraints, including that of speech and body, implies and indeed is quite indicative of the fact that the statement in NS *gatha* 69 has been made from *nishchaya* viewpoint.

Restraint of speech (*vachana gupti*) is said to be *parihara*, i.e. avoiding of utterance of words or unnecessary gossip usually indulged in by people relating to women, state/politics, theft and food etc, which are the cause (*hetu*) of sin (*papa*), or refraining or from falsehood (NS, 67). This description of restraint of or moderation in speech, which is external conversation with *para* (others), appears to have been made from *vyavahara naya*. Its description from *nishchaya naya* seems to be contained in NS *gatha* 69, after all the three restraints (*gupti*), including restraint of body from *vyavahara naya*, have been described in NS *gathas* 66 to 68. It states that *nirvrtti*, i.e. refraining or abstaining from falsehood, etc, or observing silence is *vachan-gupti* (restraint of speech) (NS, 69).

The restraint of *vachan-gupti* (restraint of speech) comprising of silence is of great significance. It is estimated that 60,000 thoughts, which come to our mind, are usually about ordinary daily activities and create a mental pattern that leaves no space for silence. This pattern reinforces our cultural belief that all gaps in conversation (silence) need to be filled quickly. For many,

silence represents an embarrassment and a social defect. Therefore, we learn to jump in to fill these spaces, whether or not our filler has any substance. Thus, we have no training in silence, and we see it as unworkable and confusing. Thus, we keep the inner dialogue going just like the outer. Yet it is in that silent space where our ancient teachers, Kundakunda and Pythagoras, tell us to let our quiet mind listen and absorb, so that confusion will disappear and enlightened guidance will come to us. The daily practice of silence gives us a greater sense of well-being, increased energy, higher productivity at a more conscious level, more satisfying relationships and a closer connection to God,⁵⁵ i.e. one's highest self, the divine self, which is the real self of all of us. Silence is, thus, not merely a time to relax or gather one's thoughts. It is also not an intellectual exercise. It is an alert openness to the still leading to the Inner Light.

The restraint of body (*kaya gupti*) is said to consist of *virutti*, i.e. refraining or abstaining from physical acts of binding, piercing, beating or killing and contracting or expanding, etc. of living or animate beings (NS, 68). Obviously, this description again seems to have been made from *vijarahara naya*, while *gupti* (restraint) relating to *sharr* (body) from *nishchaya naya*, is described in NS, 70 as *virutti*, i.e. refraining or abstaining from the activities of the body, meaning thereby *kayotsarg*, i.e. relinquishment of attachment to the body or withdrawal of psychic attention (*upayoga*) away from the body and fixing it on the intrinsic nature of the self, as also *virutti* (abstaining) from *himsa* (violence), etc. The addition of the word "etc." (*adi*) after "*himsa*" suggests that one should refrain from all other "sins like falsehood, etc., [as they] are the forms of violence, being destructive to the purity of mind or soul. They have been separately enumerated only to facilitate their understanding on the part of the disciple"⁵⁶

Since the mind, speech and body are the only means through which the influx of karmas or negativities and impurities of any kind enter into the soul, the three restraints (*gupti*) of mind, speech and body are aimed at the alignment of the internal and external activities of the self with the result that not only one's inner thoughts and emotions are devoid of negativities and impurities

but also one's speech and external behaviour vis-a-vis others are straightforward, righteous and immaculate, reflecting one's noble character, devoid of any harm or injury of any kind, cheating, etc. in respect of others. As the ancient saying declares "*manas-aiikam, vachas-aiikam, karman-aiikam hi Mahatmanam; manas-aryat, vachas-aryat, karm-aryat hi duratmanam*", i.e. the great souls or enlightened persons are honest and straightforward in their dealings with others, their speech and actions are in accordance with or in alignment with their thoughts and feelings or emotions. Whatever they have in their minds, they speak out and act accordingly. Vicious persons, on the other hand, are deceitful and crooked. There is discrepancy in what they think or feel and what they express in words, and their actions may not tally with their speech. They nurse ill-feelings, towards others in their hearts, such as hatred, aversion, enmity or jealousy, etc. They speak in nice and pleasing tone, while their actions may be most harmful to others. That is why it is said, actions speak louder than words, i.e. one should not trust the words of crooked persons.

Five most revered souls (*pancha parameshthi*)

Apart from five vows, five carefulness and three restraints (*gupti*), conduct (*charitra*) from the point of view of *vijarahara naya* also includes contemplations (*bhavana*) in regard to the true nature and the attributes, qualities or characteristics of five (*pancha*) most revered souls (*parameshthi*) (NS, 71-75). Thus, *arahaata* or *arahanta* is the enlightened soul, who has destroyed (*hanta*) his enemies (*ari*) of delusion, attachment, aversion, etc. and who is free from four *ghatia* (that are destructive of the intrinsic nature of self) karmas, viz. knowledge and intuition or vision obscuring, obstructive of inner vigour, and the most harmful of all, the deluding karmas. With the destruction of these karmas, the soul comes to possess absolute purity and full blossoming of its natural and inherent properties or powers of knowledge, vision, vigour and peace, happiness, or bliss respectively, which are crippled or held in check by these karmas. The soul is, thus, endowed with knowledge of the true nature of soul (*atmagna*) from *nishchaya naya* and omniscient (*saragna*) from *vijarahara naya* (NS,

159), and other supreme attributes (*paramgana*), and have thirty-four *atishayas*, i.e. supernatural, extraordinary acquisitions or glories (NS, 71) These glories or external adornments do not, however, make *Arhanta* an enlightened soul and are not the real reasons for his commanding greater reverence ⁵⁷

The liberated souls (*saddha*) are those who have destroyed the bondage of all the eight kinds of karmas, the four *ghatia* karmas, mentioned in the preceding para, and the four *aghatia* (non-destructive) karmas, viz. feeling (*vedaniya*), body-making (*nama*), family-determining (*gotra*) and age (*ayu*) karmas. They are, thus, possessed of eight great attributes. They are the most exalted and eternal and occupy the highest position or status in the universe. They have accomplished all that is to be accomplished (NS, 72)

The *acharyas*, the foremost among the saints, are those who have complete control over their five senses, have firm determination, are steadfast in the observance of virtues, and practise five kinds of conduct, viz. those practices that strengthen enlightened vision or world-view (*darshan-achara*), enlightened knowledge (*jnana-achara*), ennobling enlightened conduct consisting of 13 rules of conduct (5 *vratas*, 5 *amiti* and 3 *gupti*), described in NS *gathas* 56-70 (*charitra-achara*), the austerities of *pratikraman*, etc. (*tapa-achara*), and inner spiritual power, force, or vigour (*urya-achara*) (NS, 73)

Those saints, who are endowed with *ratna-traya*, i.e. the three jewels of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct, are well-versed in Jain scriptures and are capable of teaching and instructing others the principles of Jainism, remain unperturbed in adverse circumstances and are firmly established in desirelessness are known as *upadhyaya* (NS, 74)

Lastly, there are saints or noble souls (*saddhus*), who are free from all worldly engagements. They are always absorbed in four kinds of contemplations, viz. those of *maitri* (amity, friendliness and fellow-feeling and goodwill towards all living beings), *pramod* or *mudita* (appreciation of the merit of others), *kariṇa* (unstinted sympathy, compassion, or kindness for those in distress), and *madhyastha* (equanimity towards the perversely inclined). They are *nargrantha*, i.e. free from all attachment to worldly objects and

persons, and *nirmoha*, i.e. devoid of delusion and infatuation (NS, 75)

In NS *gathas* 71 to 75, Kundakunda has enumerated the attributes and qualities of the five revered souls (*panch parameshthi*) and asked people to contemplate about those attributes. These contemplations (*bhavana*), he adds, constitute conduct (*charitra*) from *varuhana naya* (NS, 76). This statement is full of great psychological significance and proves that Kundakunda, besides being a philosopher and thinker, had considerable knowledge of human psychology. Contemplations or affirmations, as modern psychologists emphasize, play an important part in our life. Affirmations, Dennis T. Jaffe and C. D. Scott observe, are "positive personal statements that modify negative personal beliefs and expectations, and motivate and influence us in new directions: we take these messages into ourselves and repeat them until they become reality for us. affirmations are a way to reprogramme the mind for more positive results. When practiced properly and often, they too become our internal reality" ⁵⁴

Thus, thoughts, feelings, affirmations or contemplations (*bhavana*), which are repeated and internalized, play a very significant part in moulding our attitude, which in turn affects and determines our behaviour. In NS *gathas* 71 to 76, Kundakunda has not asked us to indulge in external, formal ritual of worship with offerings of certain things (*dravya puja*). He has only advised us to meditate, reflect and contemplate on the superb, highly ennobling qualities, the attributes or the true nature of the supreme, exalted and noble souls with a view to get inspiration and psychological strength to emulate them.

The rationale and purpose of reverential contemplations in regard to the attributes of the *parameshthi*s (the supreme dignitaries) lies in "*unde tad guna labdhye*," ⁵⁵ i.e. to inculcate those qualities and virtues so as to attain the status of the supreme soul (*paramatma*). Thus, this reverential contemplation is not an empty, meaningless, barren ritual or recitation of laudatory compositions (*stuti, prarthana*, etc.), but has deep roots in psychology.

Another noteworthy remark of Kundakunda is that such contemplations are to be considered as *charitra* (conduct) from

vyavahara naya. These contemplations (*bhavana*) are said to belong to the *vyavahara* viewpoint because they are concerned with the appreciation of the attributes of other (*para*) beings, and because these virtues or qualities have not as yet become part of *sva* (one's own being)

While subsequent writers have elaborated on the basic moral rules of conduct in greater detail,⁶⁰ Kundakunda's descriptions and observations in that regard, expressed in *Nyamsara gathas* 56-70, remain quite unique

While the rules of moral conduct help us in refraining from what is harmful to others or inauspicious activities, avoiding misdeeds and sins, and engaging in beneficial or auspicious activities, in relation to others, the enlightened conduct (*samyak-dharma*) is preceded by enlightened world-view (*samyak-darshan*) and enlightened knowledge (*samyak jnana*), and is based on self-restraint and self-discipline (reliance on the self), devoid of attachment, aversion and passions, etc. An enlightened person, therefore, is not deluded by and attached or attracted to pleasant objects, or having aversion or dislike towards unpleasant objects or acts. He has proper understanding of the essential nature of the true self, remains free from delusion, attachment, aversion, and passions, etc. and keeps the objective of salvation in mind, and maintains his calm and equanimity

The five *vrata*s (vows), as mentioned in *Nyamsara* and other Jain texts are exactly same as five *yama* of Patanjali. *Yama* is the first constituent element of Patanjali's *ashtanga* (eight-fold) *yoga*. The word "*yama*" is said to be derived from the root verb "*yamu uparame*" which means that "*yamyante upramyante nirvartyante bhavadibhya indriyana yaste yamah*,"⁶¹ i.e. those activities which lead our senses and mind away from violence, etc. unwholesome, inauspicious and sinful activities and thought activities and toward activities and psychic dispositions centred on the true nature of the soul. The observance of the *yama* (*vrata* in Jain terminology) facilitate harmony between individual and society and mental peace and happiness

The mundane *jiva* (self) has heard about, observed and experienced the worldly enjoyments and consequential bondage, but

the essential nature of the true or the highest self has never been comprehended ⁶² Hence, he is easily attracted to pleasant objects and has feelings of repulsion or aversion to unpleasant objects of the world. Consequently, such a deluded being has been indulging in impure thoughts or psychical dispositions of attachment, aversion and passions, etc., which are different from its intrinsic nature, i.e. *para-bhava* or *ubhava*. These psychical states or dispositions continue to captivate his mind, making him dependent on enslaving desires, which are endless, and lead to never-ending tension, and suffering.

Through *vrata*s (non-violence, etc. five vows), one resolves to keep off the sinful activities. The *samati*s (carefulness in movement, partaking of food, talking, etc.) are meant not only to help and support the effective observance of vows but also to guard against the defilement, pollution or distortion of the soul as a result of one's careless, indolent or negligent activities, and the *gupti*s (the three restraints of mind, body and speech) signify extreme vigilance in regard to indulgence in any kind of sinful activity. Since every thought, word and deed has its consequences the emphasis laid on these restraints (*gupti*) is quite significant.

Thus, the process of self-purification consists of both external and internal methods of self-discipline: the external by way of *vrata*s (five vows), carefulness (five *samati*) and *gupti*s (three restraints of mind, body and speech) and the internal through the methods of *pratikraman* (repentance), etc. Since both external and internal attempts help in purification, both are called *tapas* (austerity or penance) from *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* points of view. In order to be comprehensive and complete, this process of purification must not only prevent the flow of fresh negativities and impurities (*samsara*) but also liquidate the already accumulated impurities (*mritya*). Individual responsibility in regard to his spiritual advancement begins with a decision to follow the righteous path of moral conduct, i.e. *vyavahara dharma*. Good character is realized through constant cultivation of goodness. It requires heedfulness, vigilance and perseverance. Good deeds are the manifestation of a healthy spiritual life.

Vyavahara charitra is also tapas-charan

One of the several unique insights provided by Kundakunda is that, of all the Jain philosophers and scholars, he alone, to the best of my knowledge, has stated, in quite unambiguous and categorical terms, that *vyavahara-charitra* (external moral conduct in relation to others) is *tapas-charan* (austerity) from *vyavahara* point of view (NS, 55)

This bold assertion is quite significant in several respects. Firstly, since *tapas* (austerity) of any kind is generally identified with asceticism, Kundakunda's description of vows, etc. *vyavahara-charitra* as *tapas* (austerity) is a bold statement as it destroys the myth that austerity or penance (*tapas*) is to be performed only by ascetics or *munis*. Secondly, it shows that in Kundakunda's eyes, *vrata*, *samati*, etc. *vyavahara* conduct, not only represent the goodness of one's external conduct in relation to others but also signifies that the practice of righteousness or rules of morality are manifestation of internal self-restraint. They, thus, represent inner purity expressed in outer behaviour of a person. Thirdly, the categorization of *vyavahara charitra* as *tapas charan* does away with the formal, rigid and artificial distinction between the rules of conduct laid down separately for the householders and the ascetics. Fourthly, it shows that Kundakunda is more concerned with those aspects of morality which represent inner purity than with outward forms, or rituals. It is for that reason that Kundakunda's description of *vrata*, *samati*, etc. rules of *vyavahara* conduct do not include ceremonial practices of *japa*, *mala*, etc. or those concerned with mere not eating root or green vegetables on particular days of a month. Fifthly, it also shows that Kundakunda does not give prominence to the outward practices of asceticism, such as fasting, etc., which may turn out to be unnecessary torture of the body without leading to internal calm and equanimity. Sixthly, it is precisely for these reasons that Kundakunda's description of *vrata*, etc. external *vyavahara tapas* (austerity) did not include the traditional six types of external austerities, viz. fasting (*anashana*), semi-fasting, reduced diet or taking only part of a full meal (*arumandarya*), voluntary limiting the range of choice or the variety and the manner of seeking food (*uttaparsankhyana*), giving

up delicacies or stimulating diet (*rasapantiyaga*), sitting, sleeping or residing in a lonely place, etc (*uruktashayyasana*), and bodily discomforts (*kaya-klesha*)⁶³ Seventhly, designation of *vyavahara* conduct as *vyavahara tapas-charan* (austerity), signifies that Kundakunda thought so highly of the moral rules of self-restraint that he felt that they were capable of effecting, as per *Tattvartha-Sutra* aphorism "*tapasa narijana cha*", (*Tattvartha Sutra*, IX. 3), *samvara* (stoppage of the influx of fresh *karmas*) as well as *narijana* (dissociation of the already accumulated *karmas*), thereby playing a significant role in the liberation of the soul

Uniqueness of Kundakunda's *vyavahara* conduct

Thus, *vyavahara* conduct, consisting of external moral conduct of five vows, five *samitis* (carefulness) and three *gyotis* (control of mind, speech and body), aims at refraining from *ashubha* (inauspicious, unwholesome activities and deep attachment to objects of sensual gratification), which are harmful to the self and others, and performing *shubha* (auspicious, wholesome and moral) activities, which is *sva-para-hetuk*,⁶⁴ i.e. beneficial to the self as well to others (*Dravya Sangraha*, 45)

It is significant to note here that this description does not include rituals, *deva puja* (worship, devotion to supreme souls), *gauripasti* (respecting and serving *gauri*), prayers, *japa, mala*, external austerities of fasting, etc, bodily discomforts and donation or charity. It also does not speak of *ganavratas* (augmenting or supporting vows), *shikshavratas* (self-disciplinary vows or practices), *pratimas* (stages of moral progress) or *ganasthanas* (stages or levels of spiritual development)

It is, indeed, a pity and matter of concern that a particular segment or section of Digambara Jains, who claim to be the most ardent followers of Acharya Kundakunda, not only minimize, ignore or even deny their (rules of *vyavahara* conduct) significance but also consider them to be undesirable or rejectable (*beyu*), because they are the cause of karmic bondage, and, for that matter, equate them with *ashubha* (inauspicious, unwholesome, sinful) activities

On the other hand, almost all sections of Jain society, both

Digambara and Shvetambara, have ruled out *śamśti* and *gṛhṭi* components of Kundakūda's *vyavahāra cāritra* (conduct) from the purview or domain of the householder, i.e. reserving them as Do's only for the ascetics. Even as regards the five vows (*vratas*), a division has also been effected between *anu-vratas* (observance on minor scale) and *maha-vratas*, i.e. their observance on a major scale, which again falls within the domain of ascetics.

Moreover, keeping in view the convenience of the people, the householders have even been relieved of the duty to observe these *anu-vratas*, which have been replaced by abstention from eating five *udambāra* fruits, such as fig, etc., that are considered to contain living beings in the concept of *moolganas* (the so-called primary or fundamental moral qualities). It is, therefore, not without reason that Acharya Tulsī of the Terapanth sect among Shvetambaras considered it necessary to resuscitate these *anu-vratas* by launching a movement in their support. All that has been stated above proves not only the deterioration in moral standards but also the growing chasm between morality and spiritualism (inner purity), on which Kundakūda laid great emphasis.

Necessity of both *vyavahāra* and *nishchaya cāritra*

Niyamsara emphasizes the necessity of combining external moral conduct of vows, etc. from *vyavahāra naya* and internal conduct of self-discipline (*pratīkraman*, etc.) from *nishchaya naya* for achieving enlightened conduct (*samyak-dharmā*) which together with enlightened vision (*samyak-darśhan*) and enlightened knowledge (*samyak-jñāna*) constitutes the path of salvation or liberation. For attaining self-realization, the state of pure self, one needs to keep both outer (external) and inner lives pure, i.e. free from all sinful and unwholesome activities and thoughts. That both external restraint in regard to objects of sensual gratification practised through vows, carefulness etc. from the *vyavahāra naya* and renunciation of internal shortcomings and impurities of attachment, passions, etc. through the practice of inner self-discipline of *pratīkraman*, etc. from *nishchaya naya* form integral parts of *samyak-dharmā* (enlightened conduct) is emphatically asserted

in *Dravya Samgraha* (gatha 45-46)

Self-restraint and self-discipline are not only good for one's physical health but also ensure one's internal peace and freedom. When Dean Ornish, the noted heart problem specialist once asked Jonas Salk, the renowned scientist, if he exercises, Salk replied, "I exercise restraint." Ornish then poses questions "Why not just do everything you want? Why impose limitations on your freedom?" Dr Salk then answers "Because self-imposed limitations can help to free us." Ornish added "What appears like self-restraint can be self-empowerment. Ultimately it is a choice between true freedom or being a slave to our compulsions."⁶⁵

As already stated, from the *vyavahara naya* the self, in its worldly existence, considers himself to be *karta* and *bhokta* of material (*pudgala*) *karmas*, i.e. *para dravya* (other substance). Accordingly, the empirical self identifies himself with body, wealth, etc. other objects and substances, which are considered to belong to him, and has sense of "mineness" (*mamatu bhava*) in them. Hence, *vyavahara* conduct is aimed at controlling or putting restraints on his inauspicious (*ashubha*), unwholesome, sinful external activities including aggressive, violent and acquisitive instincts and tendencies. Such behaviour not only pollutes and vitiates one's own emotions and thoughts but also proves harmful and injurious to others in the society. To desist from *papa* (wrong and sinful acts) is more important than indulging in auspicious (*shubha*) activities.

Thus, people are enjoined to restrain themselves from committing any harm, injury or violence from mind, body or speech and undertake limitation of their wants and possessions. Since there is no end to one's desires, unrestrained and greedy acquisition of possessions and goods not only leads to inflation of one's ego, pride (*ahankara*), deceit, tension, etc. in one's mind but also results in the exploitation of others and imbalance, disharmony and tension in society.

Hence, non-violence (*ahimsa*), etc. rules of ethical conduct, carefulness (*samati*), and restraint of mind, speech and body are described as *charitra* (conduct) from *vyavahara* point of view, which is concerned with external, outer, moral, and social aspects of an individual. Literally, *vyavahara-naya* is "a standpoint concerned with

the worldly reality," i.e. the relationship with others *Nishchaya naya*, on the other hand, concentrates on the internal, inner, mental, spiritual aspects of the self

Both self-restraint of one's external moral conduct (*vyavahara charitra*) and self-discipline of one's mental states and psychic dispositions undertaken with a view to internal purification (*nishchaya charitra*) are primarily concerned with emotional self-regulation, the management and control of one's emotions, especially the negative emotions or passions (anger, pride, deceit and greed) The external and internal aspects of one's conduct have been described by Howard Gardner as *inter*-personal and *intra*-personal intelligences respectively Inter-personal intelligence, he says, is the ability to understand other people [their moods, motivations, and desires] and to work cooperatively with them, while intra-personal intelligence is inward-looking, having "access to one's own feelings and the ability to discriminate among them and draw upon them to guide behaviour"⁶⁶

Peter Salovey synthesises external self-restraint and internal self-discipline of *vyavahara* and *nishchaya charitra* or Gardner's *inter*-personal and *intra*-personal intelligences in his basic definition of emotional intelligence (E I) expanding these abilities into five domains (1) knowing of one's emotions Self-awareness — recognizing a feeling *as it happens* — is the keystone of E I, (2) managing emotions Handling feelings so they are appropriate is an ability that builds on self-awareness, (3) motivating oneself MarshaUing emotions in the service of a goal is essential for paying attention, for self-motivation and mastery Emotional self-control — delaying gratification and stifling impulsiveness — underlies accomplishment of every sort, (4) recognizing emotions in others Empathy, another ability that builds on self-awareness, is the fundamental "people skill", and (5) handling relationships The art of relationship is, in large part, skill in managing emotions in others⁶⁷ It is significant to note that the first three of these abilities are concerned with inner self-discipline, while the last two are the external manifestation of internal aspects

According to Jain texts, the self considers himself to be *karta* and *bhokta* of its own impure (*ashuddha*) psychic dispositions

(*bhavas*), such as attachment, aversion, passions, etc *bhava-karma*, arising as a result of *dravya* (material) karma. Although these impure *bhavas* are the product of *para-dravya* (physical karman), which acts as a subsidiary cause (*namutta*), they are soul's own psychic *bhavas* (*svaka parinama*) (*Pravachanasara*, II 94) in which the self itself acts as primary (*upadana*) cause.

Although the impure *bhavas* (attachment, etc.) of the soul are the resultant of material (*pudgala*) *dravya-karma*, which do not belong to the soul, the self is responsible for them (*bhava-karma*). The author of *Dravya Samgraha* (DS, 8) has described them *chetan-karma* from the *nishchaya* point of view. The soul's impure modification (*parinama*) in the form of attachment, aversion, etc. is said to be *nishchaya bandha* (karmic bondage from the *nishchaya naya*), while bondage of material (*dravya*) karman is called *vyavahara bandha* (bondage from *vyavahara naya*).

If the self will consider itself bound by its own *parinamas* (modifications of soul's own intrinsic nature), it will realise its own responsibility in the matter and will exert itself to liberate itself from the bondage of its own impurities or *ubhavas* (distorted psychic dispositions). However, if the self will regard himself as bound by other substance, it will hold other responsible, feel helpless and not make efforts to liberate itself. Literally, *nishchaya naya* means "a standpoint concerned with determination". While one may not be sure about the other, one can be definitive about oneself, provided one indulges in sincere self-introspection and self-analysis. Others may judge him wrongly by looking at his outward appearances and behaviour, but the person concerned is the best judge of himself in deciding about his inner mental states, processes and psychic dispositions. Hence, none other than one's true self can set him free. Moreover, attachment, aversion, passions, etc. are not only manifestations of defilements, deviations and distortions of the intrinsic pure nature of the self and the main cause of *dravya* (material) bondage but also primarily responsible for all the sinful activities (*papa urtti*).

Nishchaya charitra

It is for these reasons, that Kundakunda lays utmost emphasis in *Nyamsara* on inner purification of the self through repentance (*pratikraman*), etc. methods of self-discipline. These measures of self-discipline are called *charitra* (conduct) from *nishchaya* point of view and as many as seven chapters containing 82 *gathas* (verses 77 to 158) have been devoted in discussing them, as compared to only 19 *gathas* (verses 56 to 68 and 71 to 76) in one chapter dealing with *vjarahara charitra* (conduct) from *vjarahara naya*.

After describing the external, moral conduct, from *vjarahara naya*, Kundakunda proceeds to describe *pratikraman*, etc. self-disciplinary methods of purification of the empirical self from *nishchaya naya*, keeping in view the intrinsic purity of the soul as the goal.

In the rules of self-discipline laid down in chapters 5 to 11 dealing with *pratikraman*, etc., Kundakunda repeatedly emphasizes the necessity for *jiva* (self) of practicing discrimination (*bhed abhyasa*) between *svabhava* (intrinsic nature of the self) and *ubhava* (defilement or distortions of intrinsic nature), between *jiva* and *para dravya*, i.e. material karma (*dravya karma*) (NS, 106) and between self and attachment, etc. impure dispositions (*bhava karma*) (NS, 82). He urges man to give up the psychic states generated by *para dravya*, i.e. alien substance (NS, 121), *para-bhava*, i.e. psychic dispositions of alien nature (NS, 97), *ubhava* (perverted or distorted psychical states), such as anger, etc. (NS, 114), enmity (*vaara*), desires and expectations (NS, 104), auspicious and inauspicious *bhava* (NS, 120), attachment and aversion (NS, 120, 128, and 137), passions (NS, 112 and 115), *no-kashaya*, i.e. minor or pseudo-passions (NS, 131-132), to renounce *upareet-abhinivesha*, i.e. perversion or distortion of one's understanding regarding the essential nature of the self (NS, 139), *mithya* (deluded or distorted) *darshan*, *jnana* and *charitra* (NS, 91), which are *ubhava-guna*, i.e. perverted or distorted attributes of the self (NS, 107), and relying on the self (NS, 99), to practice enlightened view, knowledge and conduct (NS, 100), an attitude of *madhyastha*, or equanimous *bhavas* based on the contemplation that his soul is distinct from

karmas (NS, 111) and equanimity (NS, 104, 124, and 126), and *bhava-shuddhi* or purity of psychic dispositions (NS, 112), to control senses, (NS, 105), and becoming *jitendriya*, i.e. conqueror of senses and sensual pleasures (NS, 125), and being firmly established in *atma-svabhava*, i.e. intrinsic nature of the soul (NS, 111 and 147) and *ny-bhava*, i.e. the essential nature of the true self (NS, 97, 110 and 139)

The whole exercise in self-discipline is aimed at reorientation of the empirical self on the right path and self-reformation, thereby regaining the unalloyed, pure state of the soul. This reorientation and reformation of old habits of negative thinking and misdeeds requires constant contemplations and repeated practices of self-disciplinary methods of *pratikraman*, etc. because it is not possible to change one's perception or orientation all at once.

Pratikraman

Pratikraman (repentance of past misdeeds and negative thoughts) is undertaken to promote and fortify enlightened conduct. In *pratikraman*, the self contemplates that the impure psychic states and attitudes, such as attachment, aversion (NS, 80) and passions (anger, pride, deceit and greed) (NS, 81) arise out of the operation of material karman and do not belong to the pure soul. The true self is pure consciousness, which is quite independent and free from them. This kind of discriminative insight and practice (*bhed abhyasa*) (NS, 82) facilitates equanimity and enlightened conduct. He abstains from *arta dhyana* (mournful concentration involving anguish, pain or sorrow resulting from a distressed state of mind) and *raudra dhyana* (cruel or wrathful concentration), which is characterised by cruelty, deceitfulness, mercilessness and intense greed, and engages in *dharma* (the virtuous or righteous) and *shukla* (pure) concentration (NS, 89). In other words, righteous and pure concentrations devoid of attachment and aversion is *pratikraman*. One also renounces deluded views, etc., which he has experienced since past lives (NS, 90) and contemplates on practicing enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct (NS, 91).

Repentance of past misdeeds helps in strengthening one's resolve not to repeat past mistakes in future and to abstain from contracting any impure, unwholesome, or negative thoughts in future, to remain steadfast in the observance of vows and performance of essential duties and self-control (*samyam*). If a person has indulged in any sinful activities or unwholesome psychic disposition or committed any transgression of vows or self-control, then he should undertake repentance and self-criticism of one's own faults rather than looking at other's faults, and resolve to reestablish himself on the right track. This returning back to the righteous path of self-restraint is called *pratikeraman*.

Another significant aspect of *pratikeraman* is forgiveness. It means seeking forgiveness for one's own mistakes, shortcomings, and lapses and forgiving others for their mistakes. This is necessary because only by emancipating oneself from the complexes (*granthi*) of enmity, ill-feeling, etc. one can have tranquility or equanimous state of mind that will enable him to concentrate on self. In the absence of this equanimity, all of one's prayers, devotion to enlightened souls, study of scriptures and austerities, etc. are not of much use.

We are all fallible human beings and as the saying goes "to err is human," i.e. we are liable to commit mistakes. It may be said that one who does not commit any mistake is divinity personified, not a human being. A person who commits mistakes and does not mend his mistakes but continues to make the same mistakes again and again, is also not a human being. A person who commits mistakes but mends his mistakes and resolves not to repeat those mistakes in future is truly a human being. Before one mends one's mistakes, one has to be aware of those mistakes. This is possible when, at the end of the day, like a banker balancing his accounts, one reviews his activities and sees where one has slipped. While nobody likes to be audited and held accountable, yet the task of auditing and evaluation is vital both in democracy and business. The same is the case of morality and spirituality, with the difference that the auditing and evaluation is done not by others but is best done by oneself, i.e. it has to be self-auditing and self-evaluation.

We generally tend to see faults of others and ignore those of our own. There is a saying "*prayab sarshap matram para-dridam pashyati, atmano bhu matram pashyannapi na pashyati*," i.e. usually one sees or observes even the minutest (such as mustard seed) fault or defect in others, but if there is as big a defect as *bhel* fruit in one's own self, one does not care to see it even though it is so apparent or that even while seeing it one ignores it. In the field of moral and spiritual development, the task of self-analysis, self-auditing or self-evaluation and holding oneself responsible for the shortcomings, mistakes, etc. in one's thoughts, feelings and actions is no less, if not more, critically important. Therefore, Kundakundacharya has instituted a strict regime of internal audit, self-introspection, self-awareness, and self-discipline by constant contemplations and repeated practices of *pratikraman*, etc. self-reformatory, self-regulatory and self-transformation methods, techniques and tools. To control the mind and change one's life style is, indeed, a Herculean task.

Business management *guru* (expert) Hollinshead states "Of course we are all fallible but if someone makes the same mistake three times it becomes a problem." So it is important to understand why mistakes had occurred and why they are repeated. Therefore, better, more alert management encourages the staff to be open about mistakes and to confess them to his superiors. It also takes precautionary measures, institutes adequate controls and even imposes tougher penalties so that problems do not spin out of control. In the same way, *pratikraman*, etc. methods of self-discipline are, in fact, management techniques or tools in the field of morality and spirituality, i.e. rectification and prevention of lapses and mistakes in *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dhantra*, so that they do not recur again and create serious problems in life damaging to one's peace and happiness.

If a person is in the habit of blaming others, he can never improve himself. Even when the other person has given some advice or suggestion, it is up to you to accept or reject it. By putting the blame on other (*para*), one cannot absolve himself from the shortcomings or faults for which none other than himself is to be held responsible and to be blamed, only then can

one undertake repentance and mend one's ways so that the mistakes are not repeated in future. *Pratikraman* is, thus, intimately related to *pratyakhyan*.

Pratyakhyan

In *pratyakhyan*, one resolves to renounce auspicious and inauspicious thought activities, *mamata-bhava*, feeling of attachment with body and possessions, etc (NS, 99), and all *dushcharitra* (unwholesome, sinful, unrighteous conduct) in future by three means (of body, mind and speech) (NS, 103)

He contemplates that his own intrinsic nature (*svabhava*) is equivalent or rather the same as that of the enlightened soul, the perfect, pure self (*saham*), who is endowed with infinite vision, infinite knowledge, infinite bliss and infinite vigour (*ananta chaturbhuja*), the natural and inherent properties of the soul (NS, 96) These four attributes are considered as the fundamental characteristics of God, as a perfect being, in all religions ⁴⁸

An enlightened person, endowed with discriminative wisdom, contemplates that he is the same (*saham*), i.e. he has the same intrinsic nature as that of the self-realized soul, who never gives up its own nature and never adopts or accepts *para-bhava* (nature of other object or substance, having different nature), but perceives and knows all (NS, 97), without any choice, liking or disliking, thereby remaining disinterested observer or seer (*drashta*) and knower (*jnata*). Along with *jnata* and *drashta bhava* (psychic disposition), another term "*sakshi bhava*" (remaining a mere witness) is also used ⁴⁹ The important point to note here is that these terms do not mean inaction or laziness. They imply that one should be *rub-kankshita*, i.e. not attached to the ends, i.e. success or achievement in life, believing that the end justifies the means, but one should uphold *dharma*, perform action in all sincerity and stick to the righteous means, i.e. the path of enlightened conduct, anchored or based upon enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge

An enlightened person also contemplates that he is that supreme

self (*sobham*), i.e. he has the potentiality of becoming the supreme soul, which is free from all the four aspects of karmic bondage, viz. *prakṛti* (nature, quality or class of karma), *sthiti* (duration), *anubhāga* (intensity of fruition) and *pradeśa* (quantity or mass of material karmic particles) and contemplating as such he wants to remain established and absorbed in his own pure self (NS, 98)

Sobham

In the three *gāthas* (NS 96-98) of *Nīyamasāra*, the word "*sobham*" is repeated three times. In *Samayasāra* also, "*sobham*" occurs thrice (SS, *gāthas* 297-299), along with adjectives of "conscious being" (*cheda* or *chetayata* in Sanskrit), "seer" (*dattha* in Prakrit or *drashta* in Sanskrit) and "knower" (*nada* in Prakrit or *jñata* in Sanskrit). It may be mentioned here that the word "*sobham*" (*aham brahmasmi*, I am *brahman*, or that I (*jīvatma*) has the potentiality to be *brahman*) also finds mention in the Upanishads. In "*sobham*", which is made up of two words "*sah*" (That or He) and "*aham*" (I), I or the self is identified with That or He. In response to the question as to how can one identify I (First Person) with He (Third Person), it may be said that *sobham* does not mean identifying the first person with the third person. *Sobham* describes two stages in the progress of the soul's journey.

Jainism holds that each *atman* (soul) has the potential to become *paramatma* (supreme soul), that this *paramatma* was *atma* or *jīva* only because of karmic limitations. *Atman* is, thus, the preliminary state (I) of *paramatma*, while *Paramatman* (Godhood) is the last and the highest stage (He) of development of *atman*. In other words, the empirical self (I) realises its pure self, i.e. becomes self-realized or self-actualized Being (He) by his own efforts or the aspirant I (the I in the stage of becoming) actually attains Godhood, the supreme state of Being (He), i.e. becomes *paramatma* (the Perfect Being). According to Jainism, there is no distinction whatsoever of any kind between this particular self-realized *paramatma* (I becoming He) and other supreme souls or *paramatma*. In other religions, however, the individual soul (*jīvatma*), on attaining liberation (*moksha*) is either said to merge with *arshi* (whole, i.e. *brahman*, the absolute, one without a second, cosmic

principle) or is assigned a special status (prophet or son of God) or proximity to God, but cannot dream of becoming God himself as he cannot be equated with *brahman*, God, Allah, Father, Krishna, Vishnu or Shiva, etc

Again, there is another pertinent question if the pure self is of the nature of conscious unity, how can he be the seer and the knower without transcending these two aspects? In reply, it may be said that intuitive awareness and knowledge are the essential attributes of the soul, and they cannot be transcended. If the supreme self is to transcend these attributes, it will become an empty abstraction, for there can be no reality without the attributes. This universal postulate, no reality without its attributes, is applicable to the supreme soul as well. Hence an attributeless reality is mere figment of imagination.

Again, if it is assumed for argument's sake, that a general substratum can exist even after the elimination of its attributes, even then, the position would be untenable, consciousness devoid of its essential attributes of intuitive awareness and knowledge will become practically a non-conscious entity which cannot be the nature of the supreme self. Hence, intuitive awareness and knowledge in as much as they are attributes resulting from the manifestation of pure consciousness must be considered to be the intrinsic properties of the pure self, since manifesting entity cannot be different from the manifestation.⁷⁰

In Jainism, substance (*dravya*) is endowed with attributes (*guna*), and accompanied by modifications (*pariyaya*), i.e. *gunapariyayavaddravyam*.⁷¹ The substance is the substratum which can have many attributes. In the above case of the pure self (a substance), which is of the nature of conscious unity, intuitive awareness and knowledge are the attributes or properties, which always reside in the substance, and cannot be separated from it. Moreover, while the pure self represents the unitary self, the generality or the universal aspect, intuitive awareness and knowledge represent its particular aspects. According to Jain doctrine of *anekant*, the contradictory characteristics or traits of universal and particular can simultaneously coexist in the same substance as inalienable parts thereof.⁷² Accordingly, there can be no universal

without the particular and vice versa. There is, thus, identity and difference between the two.

How a man thinks cannot be separated from what he is, and the question of what he *thinks* he is, is never independent of what he is in fact, this may well appear to be an insoluble problem, intellectually. The resolution of the contradiction between *sah* (That or He) and *aham* (I) is quite problematic in theistic religions. Even the Vedantins, relying upon the fact that the characteristics and attributes of the empirical ego are entirely alien to the nature of the supreme self, justifiably places the supreme self quite beyond the empirical properties.⁷³ In Jainism, however, the problem of apparent contradiction or distinction between That or 'He' and 'I' is easily resolved because of the *paramam* (changing, evolving) nature of the self and the doctrine of *anekant*. That which is 'I' and which seems to be separate from 'That', which it adores or sets as its ideal, must dissolve in the state of contemplation. Only when this I has become like that which it seeks, can it truly know and experience That because like recognises like.

The *paramam* nature of the self accounts for the difference between "I", the empirical self, having impurities and limitations due to the distortions and defilements (*ubhava*) in the soul, while "He" represents the supreme soul (*paramatma*), which is the inherent potential of everyone, which is free from those distortions and defilements, and which is none other than one's own highest self. The two are actually one entity but appear as different. According to Jainism, there is no separate, super, absolute, purely transcendental entity, God or divine agency existing independently of any relation to empirical existence, apart from the godliness, Godhood, or *paramatman*, i.e. our own pure self, or pure consciousness of one's intrinsic nature (*subhava*). Thus, when the empirical, embodied self, by its own efforts, gets rid of its physical and psychic limitations of delusion, attachment and passions, etc. (*ubhava*), it becomes *paramatman*, i.e. regains or realizes its own inherent properties or powers which are intrinsic to one's pure nature or true self.

This is possible because the potential of attaining the status

of Godhood (*paramatman*) already exists in the *atman* (self). This potentiality, which is inbuilt in the soul (Jainism holds that every living being is potentially divine), is called in Jainism *karana-paramatma*, the cause, the seed, while the actual state of *paramatman* is known as *karya paramatma*, the effect, the fruition of that seed into full blossoming, when this potentiality is fully developed.

In contemplating about *soham*, one should keep in mind that 'I' in its present embodied existence, only has the potentiality of becoming *paramatman*, i.e. attaining Godhood, the status of 'He'. *Soham is only a contemplation (anupreksha or bhavana) and not a fact of life*. It helps the empirical self in comparing its existing condition of being stained with passions, etc. with the ideal of the perfect soul and, remembering its potentiality, to make efforts, to regain its own inherent properties of the pure self, i.e. the status of *Paramatman*. Therefore, one should always be on guard in not entertaining any kind of delusion that he is already the pure self, which he is not, and hence one should not give up or become lax or lethargic in any way in the pursuit of the path of liberation consisting of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct (both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dharma* of moral rules and internal self-discipline respectively).

The Jaina principle of *anekanti* which makes possible the simultaneous coexistence of contradictory characteristics or traits (*dharma*) in the same object or substance as inalienable parts thereof,⁷⁴ resolves the so-called contradiction between 'I' and 'He'. From the point of view of modification (*pariyayarthika naya*) 'I' represents modification (*pariyaya*) or distortion of the intrinsic nature of the pure self, in the form of embodied self ('I'), who regards himself as *karta* and *bhakta* of both *dravya* (physical) and *bhava* (psychic, mental states) karmas (actions). From the substantial point of view (*dravyarthika naya*), this self is viewed as undefiled, unpolluted pure self, i.e. 'He', without any modifications, which are due to the *parinama* (evolvent) nature of the self. When the modifications, distortions or deviations of the natural self are given up, the natural, the pure self is regained.

The Jaina concept of *anekanti* not only explains the concomitance of identity and difference between substance 'He', the pure

self, and modification 'I', the empirical, embodied self, but also concomitance in regard to one and many. From the point of view of *svabhava* (intrinsic nature), consciousness is as much the essential nature of one particular being as of other innumerable living beings. In this undifferentiated consciousness (*nirukalpa upayoga*), the supreme state or the transcendental state of Godhood there is no *vikalpa* (the vicissitudes of cognized objects) of even *soham* ("He" and "I"), which is only a contemplative method for inspiration and self-confidence to attain that transcendental state. However, this concept of oneness in innumerable living beings, who have the potential of attaining the supreme state of Godhood or *Paramatman*, is not the same as the concept of one Almighty God, who is considered as the creator of Universe. The Jains do not have any problem in accepting innumerable *paramatmas* (supreme souls) having the same status of Godhood.

"In reality, Jainism does not worship any particular individuality ['He'], but that Perfect, Pure and Good status in which *atman* exists as All-knowing, All-seeing, All-powerful, All-happy and *Vitranga* (non-attached) "76 From the point of view of *shuddha naya* (pure point of view) all living beings are endowed with the same intrinsic nature and status of supreme consciousness (*shuddha mayak*). It is an indivisible unity, while the various descriptions of its nature in terms of intuition (*darshan*), knowledge (*jnana*) and conduct (*charitra*), spoken from the *vyaakhara* point of view, are mere manifestations of different aspects of the activity of that unity (*Samayasara*, 7).

Jainism, thus, emphasizes the nature of reality to be identity-in-difference or unity in the midst of diversity or multiplicity. A true Jain contemplates that his soul is eternal, having *jnana* and *darshan* as its essential characteristics. All other psychic states and thought activities are considered external to his intrinsic nature, arising out of its connection, interaction or association (*samyoga*) with other objects or substances (NS, 102). He also reflects upon pure thoughts, such as being free from passions (NS, 105) and having equanimity towards all living beings, having no ill-feeling or enmity with any of them, and renouncing all desires and expectations, and meditating on pure self (NS, 104). These con-

temptations and reflections help us to avoid repeating earlier mistakes in the future

Alochana

Alochana (confession) consists in voluntary acknowledgement of one's own faults existing at present and reflecting on pure thoughts leading to the shedding of quasi-karmic matter (*no-karma*), and *karma*, and withdrawal from attributes and modifications, which are different from the essential characteristics of the pure self (NS, 107). This confession is said to be of four kinds: (1) *alochana* (confession), i.e. establishing one's psychic dispositions in equanimity with a view to self-absorption (NS, 109), (2) *alunchhana* (eradication), i.e. capability to uproot the tree of karmas, thereby realising the equanimous and independent state of one's intrinsic nature (NS, 110), (3) *avukrtikaran* (non-deformation), i.e. contemplating with an equanimous mind that one's soul is free from karmas and is the abode of pure, unalloyed attributes (NS, 111), and (4) *bhava-shuddhi* (purity of thought), i.e. purity of psychic disposition, which is free from all desires and passions such as lust (*mada*, i.e. *kama parinama*), pride, deceit and greed (NS, 112).

In brief, an attitude of equanimity, purity of thoughts that are capable of destroying karmas, absorption in *vetraga bhava* (mental state of non-attachment) free from passions is *alochana*. Generally, passions (*kashaya*) in Jainism are said to be anger, pride, deceit and greed. Even Kundakunda has described these as passions in his works, including this work (see NS *gatha* 81 and 115), but in NS *gatha* 112, he has used lust in place of anger. This may probably be due to the fact that one becomes angry only when there is any obstruction, hindrance, challenge, opposition or obstacle in the way of fulfillment of lust (*Gita*, 2:62) or desire, which, in fact, lies at the root of the passions. As Frank Mansell says "By our own lust are we in passion pent," that "No one can bind another — he is bound by his own passion, his love [*raga*] and hate [*dvesha*]. Conquer thy lust and thou art free of all."

Prayashchitta

Prayashchitta (expiation or atonement) consists definitely in contemplation in regard to one's intrinsic attributes and destruction of anger etc one's own (*svakya*) *bhavas*, (NS, 114), which are distortions (*vikarya*) of one's intrinsic nature. Since passions (*kashaya*) are the real enemies of the soul and the main cause of karmic bondage,⁷⁶ true *prayashchitta* (expiation) consists in conquering passions anger by forgiveness, pride by humility, deceit by straightforwardness, and greed by contentment (NS, 115) About contentment, Robert Greene says in his poem "Such sweet content such minds, such sleep, such bliss, Beggars enjoy, when princes oft do miss"

Thought processes and psychic dispositions involved in observing rules of moral conduct (five vows and five carefulnesses), *sheel* (wholesome character), *samyam* (self-restraint) and control of senses help in inculcating forgiveness, etc virtues and, thus, facilitate expiation Hence, they should be constantly practised (NS, 113) Moreover, observance of austerities (*tapa*) (NS, 117-118) and concentration or meditation (*dhyana*) on the intrinsic nature and real attributes of the self (NS, 119-120), which is facilitated by the subduing of passions, necessarily constitute true expiation

Expiation, in fact, means atonement for one's sins and unwholesome inclinations, and purification of one's soul. It is defined in several ways, as *tapa*, as *bhavas* (mental states) reflected in vows, *samuti*, *sheel*, *samyam* and control of senses, i.e. *nirukara chitta* (psyche free from impurities and passions) (commentary on NS, 113), contemplation of soul's intrinsic attributes, and reliance on meditation in regard to one's intrinsic nature in order to destroy impure mental states *Prayashchitta*, as described by Kundakunda in *Niyamsara*, neither consists of the performance of various sacrifices, purificatory baths and recitation of the Vedic *mantras*, as in the Vedic literature, nor is it associated with self-torture, bodily mortification, or physical austerities (*tapas*), such as fasting, exposure to heat and cold, hunger, thirst, etc The various forms and aspects of *prayashchitta*, as mentioned in *Niyamsara*, consists of tried psychological methods or tools of self-introspection, self-

analysis, contemplation, affirmation, concentration and constant practice of wholesome moral conduct and internal austerities

Kayotsarg

After expiation, Kundakunda deals with *kayotsarg*. The word "*kayotsarg*" is made up of two words "*kaya*", meaning body, and "*utsarg*", which means giving up. Thus, *kayotsarg* means renouncing attachment to the body. The attachment to the body is the root cause of all our attachments to the objects/things and persons of the world. Again, it is primarily because of the attachment to the body that we have within us feelings of *ahamkara* (ego, pride or I-ness) and *mamatra* (*asakti*, attachment, mineness, possessiveness) and succumb to the enslaving desires and passions, which are the main cause of all our sufferings and miseries. Moreover, it is due to our life being centred on body alone consciousness that we become oblivious of our true nature, the intrinsic purity of the soul. Therefore, renunciation of attachment to the body (*kayotsarg*) is the necessary first step and the means (*sadhan*) towards focusing our psychic attention (*upayoga*) on spiritual consciousness (*adhyatma-chetana*), distinguishing between the perishable body and the eternal soul (*bheda-ujyana*), fearlessness, becoming aware that our true self is different from the internal impurities and distortions (*ubhava*) of our psychic dispositions and experiencing the equanimity of the soul.

Kayotsarg means withdrawal of psychic attention from the body (physical personality), etc. other substances (*para-dravyas*) and becoming absorbed in the contemplation of the true, undifferentiated spiritual self (NS, 121). One should relinquish attachment to the body because identification of the self with the body leads to attachment or desire for the objects of worldly enjoyment and sensual pleasures. It is the root cause of all our sufferings and mental tension. Desire for objects of physical comfort takes four different forms, and appears as greed, deceit, pride and anger (the four passions). *Greed*, as we know, is but another name for desire, to gratify which *deceit* is resorted to; and *pride* arises from the possession of what is desirable, while *anger* blazes up in con-

sequence of being foiled in an endeavour to secure an object of desire or from wounded pride⁷⁷ These passions stand in the way of self-discipline and moral and spiritual advancement. Moreover, it is because of these passions that it is not possible to undertake austerities and meditation and attain enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, which together lead to salvation

Param samadhi

Equanimity (*samyak*) and *param-samadhi* are said to be synonymous. It consists of *samyam* (self-control), *nyam*, *tapa* (austerities) and virtuous and pure concentrations (*dhyana*) on one's own soul (NS, 123). This equanimity means being steadfast and remaining firmly established in the intrinsic nature (*svabhava* or *svarupa*) of one's true self, which is possible only when one is free from *ubhava* (perverted or distorted psychical states) of attachment, aversion and passions, etc. Self-absorption or concentration on the pure self, without attachment or expectation of any kind (*vetraga bhava*), ensures that equanimity (NS, 122). Self-control (*samyam*), non-violence, etc. vows, *nyam* and austerities are the means. They are observed and practised primarily with the object of developing equanimity (NS, 123). Without equanimity, residing in forest, *kayaklesha* (bodily discomforts or mortification of the body), observance of various fasts, study of scriptures and keeping silence, etc. are of no use (NS, 124). In brief, an attitude of equanimity towards all living beings, devoid of distortions of attachment and aversion, eradication of mournful and cruel thought concentrations and inculcation of psychic dispositions (*parinama*) which transcend both auspicious and inauspicious thought activities is *param samadhi*. In this state of *param samadhi*, one does not see or investigate *guna dosha* (the good qualities or faults), in things or persons, he observes *vastu-svarupa*, the reality as it is or as it exists (*yathartha*, i.e. *yatha artha*)

In the subsequent nine *gathas* (NS, 125-133), Kundakunda describes the qualifications of persons entitled to obtain equanimity. Only those persons are said to have steadfast equanimity who are free from all sinful, demeritorious and unwholesome actions,

observe three-fold control (of body, mind and speech), conquer or restrain their senses (NS, 125), who maintain equanimous state of mind towards all living beings and cultivate reverence for life without injuring anyone (NS, 126), who keep close to the true self by observing non-violence, etc self-control, *nyam* (the jewels of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct), and austerities (NS, 127), who remain free from the distortions (*vikara*) of attachment and aversion (NS, 128), who always abstain from mournful (*arta*) and cruel (*raudra*) concentrations (NS, 129), who always refrain from meritorious (*punya*) and demeritorious or sinful (*papa*) psychic dispositions (NS, 130), who always renounce *no-kashaya* (pseudo, quasi or minor passions), such as scornful laughter, indulgence, sorrow, dislike or hatred, disgust, fear and sexual inclinations or desires (NS, 131-132), and who always practise virtuous or righteous and pure concentrations (NS, 133)

The purpose of *samāyika* is the cultivation of (1) equal goodwill and sympathy (*samabhaṃ*) towards all religions, towards all races and castes, and towards man and woman, (2) equality and evenness (*samata*), i.e. to regard all living beings equal with one's own self and to maintain evenness (equanimity) of mind on all occasions, favourable and adverse, and (3) tranquility (*sama*) to suppress and weaken passions.⁷⁸ Thus, by the practice of *samāyika* one seeks to attain gradually 'inward balance' or mental equanimity or tranquility. It is an exercise in *samāya*, etymologized as the attainment (*aya*) of equanimity or tranquility of mind (*sama*).⁷⁹ It is a tensionless state of consciousness or a state of self-absorption.

Param bhakti

Under the heading enlightened devotion (*param bhakti*), Kundakunda has used two terms, both aimed at attaining the highest state of perfection. These are (1) *nirvṛti bhakti* (devotion leading to liberation) and (2) *yoga bhakti* (devotion for attaining the state of the supreme soul or the pure self). *Nirvṛti bhakti* is devotion by a *śrāvaka* or *śramana* to enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct without any attachment or desire of any kind (NS, 134) and devotion with proper

and complete establishment of his soul on the path of liberation, thereby realising the independent attributes (attributes that are not dependent on *karma upadhi*) of the true self (NS, 136)

Though mostly people worship or indulge in devotion to liberated souls, Kundakunda here speaks of devotion to the means of liberation. Unless one is devoted to the means of liberation how can one attain liberation. This, indeed, is a unique concept of Kundakunda. This description of *nirvrtti bhakti* appears to be from the *nishchaya* viewpoint, because, as Kundakunda points out, he, who indulges in reverential devotion to liberated souls, knowing distinctly their various attributes, is performing devotion from *vijarabana* point of view (NS, 135). The rationale for such *vijarabana* type of devotion or worship, which includes eulogy (*stuti*) and obeisance (*vandana*) to the Worthy Lord, is to get inspiration from his example with a view to inculcating the same attributes in themselves and advancing on the path of spiritual development and liberation, and not for getting any worldly expectations fulfilled.

In *yoga-bhakti*, one remains absorbed in his true self by renouncing attachment, etc. impurities (NS, 137), and abstaining from all unwholesome inclinations, thought constructions, and impure psychic dispositions (NS, 138) and giving up indiscriminate clinging to perverse, deluded view (NS, 139). In other words, absorption in the pure self by giving up attachment, etc. perverse *bhavas* is *yoga bhakti*, i.e. uniting one's empirical self with the intrinsic nature of his true self. In Jainism, *yoga* refers to the activities of body, mind and speech and hence *yoga bhakti* presumably aims at purification of these activities, and absorption in one's own pure self, leading to the realization of the state of perfection or union with his own supreme soul (*paramatma*). Having well-examined *pratikraman*, etc. and observing silence, a *yogi*, should always keep in mind his own purpose (NS, 155). Thus, the description of *yoga bhakti* too seems to be from *nishchaya* viewpoint.

Pratikraman, etc. methods of self-discipline are the psychological ways of self-introspection and self-analysis aimed at self-reformation. Self-awareness signifies an on-going attention to

one's internal states. In this self-reflexive awareness, mind observes, investigates and experiences the thought activities and psychic dispositions, including the emotions. This awareness of emotions is not only fundamental to psychological insight and the building block of emotional self-control, but also enables us to change our outlook and mood. Although self-awareness can be a non-reactive, non-judgemental attention to inner states, being aware of feelings and acting to change them usually go hand-in-hand for all practical purposes. "To recognise a foul mood," John Meyer says, "is to want to get out of it." This recognition, however, is distinct from the efforts we make to keep from acting on an emotional impulse.⁸⁰

Unless one realises that he has done something wrong or committed some mistake, he is not likely to mend his ways and will continue to commit mistakes and indulge in misdeeds and unwholesome activities. Acknowledgement of one's mistakes, repentance, self-criticism, positive thinking and reflection or contemplation about the correct and wholesome psychic activities are the necessary steps to avoid repetition of those mistakes in future.

Since it is very difficult to change one's habits and attitude, this exercise in self-introspection and self-discipline has to be regular practice and needs to be sincerely undertaken and constantly practised with perseverance, that alone can ensure that the mistakes of the past will not be repeated in future and that the person is set on the right track. There is no other way to bring about self-transformation. Accordingly, Kundakunda emphasised the necessity of self-observation, i.e. observing the inner reality of the subjective world of thoughts, feelings, and emotions. He was quite aware that change in the external will not change the self. Self-change will make all the difference in one's life. Unless the inner self is rid of its impurities of attachment, aversion, and passions, all repetitions of holy texts, external penances, religious discussions and meditations, all sorts of efforts made to secure merit by giving of alms and charity, etc. and by adopting the mortifying ways of a recluse or ascetic will be of no avail. Moreover, one cannot make a person moral or spiritual by force or

compulsion, morality and spirituality is a matter of self-awareness and self-discipline

Self-discipline gives us power and freedom to express ourself, openness of mind, independence and equanimity. What appears like self-restraint can be self-empowerment. Ultimately, it is a choice between true freedom or being a slave to our compulsions. Self-imposed limitations can help to free us from our instincts, passions, our weaknesses and limitations. Meditation is also the product or outcome of self-discipline. Self-discipline is the order we impose on ourselves out of full understanding of what is best for us. It is structured industry, some kind of a plan or method by which we direct our efforts and schedule our time. It is study and activity tied to one's aspirations and pursued with perseverance and method.

Pratikraman, etc. self-purificatory methods of self-introspection, self-analysis and self-transformation are well-tried psychological techniques and the best medium of getting rid of sinful activities and unwholesome, passionate thought processes or psychic dispositions. Just as the cleaning of the physical body is necessary, so also cleansing the mind of its impurities of attachment, aversion and passions is essential. The mind is like a glass which, if not cleaned regularly, cannot help us see clearly.

If a person does not realise his mistakes or faults and does not have feeling of repentance (*pratikraman*), he is most likely to repeat those mistakes in future and the faults will most probably get more and more serious and deep-rooted, with the result that it will not be easy to get rid of them and return back to a life of sanity or faultless behaviour. If after committing some sin or fault one entertains a feeling of remorse, disgust or repentance, it is quite natural that he will not commit the same mistake again in future. While *ati kraman* means transgressing the limit(s) of decency, *prati kraman* etymologically signifies returning back or retracing one's steps back to decency and wholesome thought activities and purity. It is very difficult, Mahatma Gandhi observed, to confess one's errors. But then without it, there is no other way of eradicating impurity. Repentance reminds us that we have control over ourselves, that we can change, that we are not a pawn,

and that we are not a slave to our habits. Repentance is thus necessary for leading a good life. Moreover, by persisting with our self-analysis and introspection, we can realise our essential divinity, the intrinsic purity of our true self.

When one says, *mere dushkritya muthya bon (tadastu muthya dushkratam va*, as we recite in *Samayuka Path*), or "*nacbhama dukkadam*", these words imply that the speaker realises his mistake or misdeed, sincerely feels sorry for it, honestly asks forgiveness from oneself as well as others and entertains a feeling or resolve and affirms to himself that he will not repeat it in future. However, in the absence of the feeling of sincerity and honest affirmation, the utterance of mere words of repentance would be simply waste of time and unproductive of results. Hence, Kundakunda declares that verbal repentance and verbal observance of *pratyakhyanu*, confession, etc. practices should be considered as mere recitation from book (NS, 153), i.e. mere empty ritual.

Contemplations (*bhavana*) or affirmations, repeated unto oneself, play an important part in our life. As one thinks, so one becomes. Affirmations, Dennis T. Jaffe and C. D. Scott observe, are "positive personal statements that modify negative personal beliefs and expectations, and motivate and influence us in new directions. Affirmations are a way to reprogram the mind for more positive results. When practiced properly and often, they too can become 'our internal reality'."⁸¹

Progress in moral or spiritual ladder or in any other field of endeavour is cumulative. Hence one has to regularly review one's progress and re-commit oneself to the goal of spiritual advancement and to the various methods of self-discipline, such as *Pratikraman*, etc. Once this becomes a habit, one is surely on his way to the ideal of purity of self or inner transformation. Even a small step can prove to be rewarding.

In laying emphasis on internal purity through *pratikraman*, etc. internal austerities or *nishchaya charitra* (conduct) and emphatically declaring that mere putting on various types of insignia, or bodily or outer mark, even that of naked ascetic (SS, 408-410), devoid of enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened

conduct, is meaningless. However, Kundakunda does not deprecate the efficacy of asceticism altogether, as WJ Johnson mistakenly holds. What Kundakunda emphasizes is that internal discipline and purity is more important than outer marks and that nakedness or asceticism can not be imposed from above. It is the natural outcome or manifestation of inner purity, free from all sorts of impurities, distortions and deviations of divine nature of soul. *Pratikraman*, etc. *nishchaya charitra* (conduct) or *nishchaya tapa* (austerities) are necessary and essential steps of self-discipline as well as part of the methodology of practice of *arushyaka* (independence) and self-reliance.

Avasbyakas

Pratikraman, etc. methods of self-discipline, described above, are considered essential activities (*avyasbyaka-karma*) of enlightened conduct. Thus, Kundakunda's enumeration of *arushyakas* (essential, independent self-disciplines, obligatory duties) included *pratikraman*, *pratyakhyan*, *alochana*, *prayashchitta*, *kayotsarg*, *samayuka* and *param bhakti*. This enumeration of *arushyakas* (obligatory duties), Upadhye states, is "slightly different from the traditional enumeration of *arushyakas* (obligatory duties) (*Mulachara*, I 22), wherein *alochana* is absent, being possibly included in *pratikraman* which it precedes in actual performance (*Mulachara*, VII, 121 ff), and in place of *param bhakti*, we have *stuti* and *vandana*". Upadhye's presumption that "the traces of *stuti* and *vandana*", which belong to the *vyavahara* type or category, can be found in Kundakunda's division of *param bhakti* into two types of *nirvrtti* and *yoga-bhakti*⁸² seems to be quite misplaced. This was primarily because Upadhye did not seem to pay much attention to the understanding of the distinction between the *nishchaya* and *vyavahara* viewpoints.

All of Kundakunda's six *arushyakas*, including both kinds of *param bhakti*, have been described from the *nishchaya* standpoint, *stuti* (eulogy) and *vandana* (obedience) belong to *vyavahara* viewpoint (NS, 135). Likewise, verbal *pratikraman*, verbal *pratyakhyan* and resolve (*nyaya*) to observe certain rules and verbal *alochana*, Kundakunda states, should all be understood as of the nature of reading or study of scriptures (*svadhyaya*) (NS, 153). In other

words, they should be considered as belonging to *vyavahara* category or viewpoint. It is significant to note that, unlike other Jain texts, Kundakunda has not singled out and mentioned *sudharmya* as a separate *avashyaka*. The concept of essential or obligatory duties (*avashyakas*), as described in *Niyamsara*, has been further diluted in later years and the one prevalent at present time mentions only first three of them as part of *prayashchitta* (expiation).

The outstanding characteristic of *avashyakas*, as laid down in *Niyamsara*, is that it lays emphasis on the activities that are not dependent on other (*anya-vashab*) (NS, 141). Etymologically, *avashyaka* is said to be derived from *avash* or *na-vash*, i.e. the actions which do not depend on other and are not under the control or influence of others, not even subject to the conditioning of inauspicious or auspicious mental states (NS, 143-144). The activities should be undertaken by the self on its own accord.

Spiritually speaking, independence is in the true sense action, which is the outcome of one's conscious attentiveness, while dependence is reaction, which takes place externally in the outer world in relation or context of other and is dependent on the conditioning of *karmas*, i.e. the result of one's unconscious, instinctual attitude or pattern. True independence is in fact freedom from *raga* and *dvesha* (attachment and aversion), or *kashaya-mukti*, i.e. freedom from enslaving desires and passions (anger, pride, deceit and greed) is, in fact, true or real freedom (*kashaya mukti kei mukti eva*). It is only when man is free from these passions that he can truly live a life of independent action.

Avashyaka or independence of action is, thus, *dharm* in two senses. Firstly, it is *vastu-svabhava*, i.e. the intrinsic nature of consciousness to act with conscious awareness or attentiveness, that is free from unconscious, karmic conditioning. Secondly, it is an action, activity or duty, which ought to be performed in the direction of peace, happiness, and social well-being, good of the individual and the society. We are what we are and we will become what we make of ourselves, what we will become depends on how we use our faculties, capacities or aspects of consciousness (soul), viz. feeling, knowing and willing, consciously,

i.e. with attentiveness in a positive or negative way.

Thus viewed, *avashyakas* are said to be the means and the way to attain liberation from the karmic bondage, the essential activities of *pratikraman*, etc. *avashyakas* are such that they alone can make a person independent (*avasha*) and self-reliant (NS, 140-141). In other words, only by relying on oneself and engaging in self-discipline can one hope to destroy the karmas, have purity of mind and attain liberation and not by depending on any God, *guru* (teacher or preceptor) or the grace of anyone. If you want to be free, wish for nothing that depends on external objects or the actions of others. If your happiness is dependent on others, you have made yourself a slave.

Avashyaka means self-reliant, independent action. It has to be self-discipline undertaken by the self on its own accord by its own free will, not imposed by any other person, institution or tradition. Moreover, it is concentration on pure soul, free from *para-bhava* (psychic disposition other than the intrinsic nature of the self). Thus, a truly self-reliant enlightened person refrains from both auspicious and inauspicious inclinations, dispositions and activities, as they are the result of karmic association i.e. under the control of or dependent on others (NS, 143-144).

If one wants to be truly self-reliant, one must concentrate on conscious attention (*upayoga*) of the intrinsic nature of his pure self. It is only through that way that equanimity is fully realised (NS, 147). A person, who is devoid of independence and self-reliance, remains deficient in enlightened conduct (NS, 148). A person engrossed in sensual pleasures and self-enjoyment prides in false autonomy. He is concerned only with himself and has no concern with moral and spiritual discipline, which is considered as a burden. He thinks that self-fulfilment has nothing to do with ethics, i.e. self-restraint and internal purification through *pratikraman*, etc. methods of self-discipline.

Three kinds of self

Kundakunda states that, Interior or Enlightened Self (*antaratma*) is one who observes *avashyaka* and is self-reliant (NS, 149), who does not indulge in wrangling, discussion, bragging

etc. either externally or internally (NS, 150), and one who is absorbed in virtuous and pure concentrations (NS, 151) One who is devoid of these, is described as the Exterior Self (*bahuratma*) (NS, 149-151) In other words, one who is engrossed in worldly gossips and enjoyments and indulges in bragging, etc. is the Exterior Self, while one who practices self-control and detachment, etc. is the Interior Self One, who is free from all defects and shortcomings, both external and internal, and is endowed with the effulgence or magnificence of infinite knowledge, infinite bliss, etc. is known as *paramatma* (supreme soul or liberated self) (NS, 6-7). Thus, Kundakunda describes three kinds of self

In *Ramayana*, Tulsidas also divides human beings into three categories "*ushaya, sadhak, siddha sayane, truth jna jaga Veda bhakane*," i.e. according to Vedas, there are three kinds of selves (*jna*) in this world those who are outward-looking and seek happiness in sensual gratification, the aspirants (*sadhak*) who are inward-looking and seek peace and happiness within, and *siddha* (liberated souls) who are the abode of infinite bliss

Independence and self-reliance

One, who performs self-disciplinary acts, such as repentance etc., realizes *nishchaya* conduct, which enables him to embark on or proceed toward *vetraga charura*, i.e. conduct characterised by absence of passions and attachment (NS, 152) Those, who have the capacity to practise *pratikraman*, etc. rules of self-discipline, should practise them with concentration, those who are not capable of doing that should at least have firm conviction (*shraddhan*) in regard to the true nature of the self (NS, 154), which is the basis of *samyak darshan* (enlightened world-view) All enlightened souls have attained salvation by practicing *anushyaka* (self-reliance) and self-discipline for spiritual advancement (NS, 158)

Unless one is aware of the true nature of the self, one cannot know the impurities, limitations and deviations in oneself and one will not exert himself to realize the fullest development of the potentialities of the soul by following a regime of moral and spiritual discipline Since the self alone, according to Jainism, is responsible for the deviations, distortions or modifications of its

intrinsic nature, he alone is capable to make all the amends and transformations, thereby regaining its pure nature

Jainism lays greatest emphasis on the independence of soul and self-reliance. Karma obscures the essential nature of the self and distorts its intrinsic qualities, thereby making the self-dependent¹³ and causing bondage. However, by following the path of enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, the soul overpowers and destroys the karmic bondage and attains liberation, which is also known as achieving salvation or self-realization, i.e. realizing the true nature of the self.

According to Jainism, each soul is potentially divine and has every right to become a perfect or supreme soul (*paramatma*) enjoying perfect knowledge, perfect bliss, etc. This Godhood is not attainable by the grace or mercy of any supernatural entity or God. It is attained through one's own efforts. Jainism does not believe in the concept of a God as Creator or Ruler, but it does accept that the qualities of *sat* (existence), *chit* (consciousness) and *ananda* (bliss) attributed to God are attainable by all human beings, through their own efforts by shedding *karmas*.

Shuddha upayoga

In the *shuddha upayoga* (conscious attentiveness of the pure self) chapter, Kundakunda states that *atman* is essentially an embodiment of knowledge and knowledge is the intrinsic nature (*svatva*) or the essential characteristic of *jiva* (self). Therefore, the soul knows the self. If the self, i.e. knowledge does not know the soul, then it will become separate from the soul (NS, 170). At no stage or point of time, Chakravarti remarks, can one separate knowledge from soul and when separated each of them "becomes meaningless abstractions, incapable of existence in reality"¹⁴

In this context, Nathmal Tatia remarks

Consciousness of the *jiva* manifests itself in cognitive acts, and is not like the unchanging principle of consciousness in the Samkhya-Yoga school which ascribes the cognitive acts to *buddhi* (intelligence [intellect]) which is an evolute of the un-

conscious principle of *prakṛti*. The Jaina philosopher consequently does not differentiate the metaphysical soul (*jīva*) from the epistemic subject (*jñātā*) as is done in the Sāṃkhya-Yoga and monistic Vedānta.⁸⁵

The following observation of Hari Mohan Bhattacharya is also quite pertinent in this regard

A conscious reality is never divorced from its own conscious modifications and qualities in which lies its very life. Both structure and function make up the totality of the self or the conscious real. Perceptions and ideas, feelings and conations are of the self and in the self and are never to be regarded as out of vital relation with the immanent unity of the self. The self is never transcendent retaining aloofness from its own modifications, but is always immanent in them or cognition is not a mere unaccountable *avasthā* or state of the self, knowledge is the essence of the self. It is a *parinama* or self-differentiation of the self, it is the self knowing or cognizing. A *parinama* or modification, issuing from the *parinama* or the modifying, and yet not in essential relation with the *parinama*, is as false an abstraction as the *aparinama* or immutable real without any *parinama* or modification.⁸⁶

Kundakunda declares "Know that soul is knowledge and knowledge is soul, there is no doubt on this." It follows from this that *jñāna* and *darśhan* are *sapaṇaparyasam* (*sva-para prakāśham* in Sanskrit), i.e., the soul and its attributes — knowledge and *darśhan* (intuition) — illuminate the self as well as other (objects) (NS, 171). It is not correct to say that knowledge and soul illuminate other (objects) and *darśhan* does not, because *darśhan* will then be different from knowledge and soul (NS, 162-163). Kundakunda, however, clarifies that knowledge and soul illuminate other (objects) from the *vyavahāra naya*, so does *darśhan* (also) (NS, 164). From the *nishchaya* point of view, knowledge as well as soul illuminate the self (only), so does *darśhan* (also) (NS, 165). Drawing attention to the *sapekṣha* (relative, mutually complementary) na-

ture of these two *nayas*, Kundakunda states that there is nothing wrong or no fault if one argues that from *nishchaya-naya*, the omniscient Lord intuits the nature of the self only, but not the whole universe (NS, 166) or that from *vyavahara naya* the omniscient knows the whole universe, but not his soul (NS, 169)

The concept of *sarvajnata* (omniscience)

In stating that consciousness does not know other (objects) from *nishchaya naya*, the purpose is to ensure that *jiva's upayoga* does not identify itself with other (objects), i.e. it does not get deluded by other (objects) of alien nature and remains free or unbound by them even while knowing the whole universe (*Pravachanasara*, *gatha* I 52) Amrtachandra explains it in these words "One whose vision encompasses only external things is afflicted by the very act of perceiving the forms of the self and other (objects), for (his vision) has abandoned the self and fallen into (i.e. become attached to, hence afflicted by) the other (objects) But your [Lord's] vision, strongly overcoming other (objects, i.e. not being attached to them) and thus unafflicted, shines forth in its own grandeur" In other words, since the pure, unified *upayoga* (psychic attention) of consciousness of omniscient being is directed towards the self, in truth, he knows only the self while the knowledge of the external objects is merely incidental⁸⁷

Since *nishchaya*, which looks at things in relation to the self, relies on the self (*svashruti*), omniscience is said to know only the self from *nishchaya naya*, also knowing or cognition being the essential characteristic or intrinsic nature of the self, the soul, therefore, (always) knows the self (NS, 170) Since *vyavahara* is concerned with things in the context of other, and relies on other (*parashruti*), omniscience is said to know other (objects) from *vyavahara naya*. This point is emphatically asserted in *Nyamsara gatha* 159 "From *vyavahara* point of view, the omniscient Lord intuits and knows all (*sarvajna*), from *nishchaya* point of view, the omniscient intuits and knows only his self (*atmajna*) "

While the omniscient can have direct intuitive awareness, experience or knowledge of his own self, he cannot possibly have

that direct experience or intuitive awareness in regard to other objects, his knowledge of all other objects in the universe is, therefore, considered by Kundakunda as *aupcharik*, a social or religious necessity from the *vyavahara* viewpoint "With Kundakunda," A.N. Upadhye remarks, "*sarvajñata* (omniscience) is a dogma, a religious heritage and an essential part of the doctrine he represents," in the circumstances when different schools of thought have been struggling hard "to prove and establish the omniscience of their respective prophets, for on that depended the very life and death of their systems it was the omniscience that could give infallibility to their prophets and therefore automatically to their scriptures that constituted the utterances of these prophets" *Sarvajñata* (omniscience), Upadhye adds, thus, "came to be accepted and discussed only as a religious necessity" ⁸⁸

The assertion about the soul being *sarvajña* (omniscient) from *vyavahara naya* and *atmajña* (knowing only self) is quite significant and found only this work. Here omniscient's *sua para-prakasham* is stated to be from a certain point of view, in a certain sense or in some respect, i.e. in relative terms

How it is possible for the omniscient to know all the objects of the whole universe is explained in *Pravachanasara gatha* I 23. It is stated that knowledge, being the intrinsic nature or quality of the self, has the capacity to know the various objects of knowledge in the world. In that sense, the self may be said to be as extensive as the whole universe or omnipresent (*sarvagata*). Acharya Kundakunda observes "The self is declared to be the extension of knowledge, knowledge the extension of the knowable, the knowable is the universe and that which is beyond the universe (*aloka*), therefore knowledge is omnipresent." Commenting on it, Acharya Amrtachandra remarks

According to the saying "the substance has its qualities and modifications equivalent to itself," the self is the extension of the knowledge, for it evolves without becoming more or less than the knowledge, and knowledge is the extension of the knowable, for it abides therein, as fire in the fuel. The knowable is as much as everything, it is the totality of the six sub-

stances Therefore knowledge is omnipresent ⁸⁹

But while the soul may be said to be omnipresent or as extensive as the knowable (i.e. the Universe) on account of knowledge, it does not pervade the universe absolutely. The knower, i.e. the self, knows and intuits the whole world, without entering or taking hold, with its own *pradeshas*, of all the things which function as knowables. The objects do not exist in knowledge and there is no soul outside the body it occupies, for its attributes are found only in that body. "A soul is not all-pervasive because its qualities are not found everywhere" ⁹⁰

A. N. Upadhye observes

The omniscient knows and sees the whole world, the variegated and unequal objectivity of the present or otherwise, neither entering into nor entered into by the objects of knowledge, just as the eye sees the objects of sight (*Pravachanasara*, I 27, 47). Omniscience operates on the objects, just as a sapphire thrown in milk pervades the whole of it with its luster, omniscience is ubiquitous in its functions, and therefore the omniscient is called omnipresent, and all the objects are within his knowledge (*Pravachanasara*, I 28-31, 35). The external objectivity does not affect him, though he sees and knows everything completely (*Pravachanasara*, I 32) ⁹¹

Thus, from the point of view of *vijñāhara*, consciousness knows material and immaterial objects, sentient and non-sentient, the self and all (other) substances, directly without recourse to the senses (NS, 167). The apprehension of the objects takes place directly by the soul without the aid of sense organs. If knowledge constitutes the very essence of the self, the *jīva* can "know unaided everything directly and exactly as it is, only there should be no impediment in its way. External conditions, such as the organ of sight and the presence of light, are useful only indirectly and *jñāna* results automatically when the obstacles are removed through their aid" ⁹²

The commentator of *Nīyāmasāra* has termed this as *sakal*

pratyaksha (perceiving and knowing the entire, whole or all objects directly), as distinguished from *svanipa pratyaksha* (intuiting, knowing or experiencing the intrinsic, divine, pure nature of the self directly) from *shuddha naya*. The commentator also distinguishes *keval-jnana* (omniscience) from *sahaj-jnana* (natural or pure consciousness), which is said to be pure (*shuddha*), intrinsic nature of the self or essential characteristic (*antas-tattva*), effulgent sentient-principle, pure consciousness, that is universal in all beings, *svanipa pratyaksha*, and endowed with *ananta-dhatusthaya* (infinite vision, infinite knowledge, infinite bliss and infinite vigour) (commentary on NS, *gathas* 11-12)

Another significant point mentioned in *Nyamasara* is that in omniscience, both *jnana* (knowledge) and *darshan* (intuition) operate simultaneously as light and heat exist simultaneously in the sun (NS, 160). In *samsari jivas* (worldly beings), leading a mundane existence, however, *darshan* and *jnana* operate in succession, i.e. *jnana* (knowledge) is preceded by *darshan* and the two *upayogas* do not arise simultaneously. Benjamin Libet's experiment demonstrating that the thinking brain, i.e. intellectual, decision-making cortex, has to wait 300 or more milliseconds after the start of activity in the brain known as *readiness potential* (RP) seems to confirm that *darshan* precedes knowledge.

In *darshan*, we have intuitive awareness of a thing without any detail or particularities. Before we know things in a detailed way, there is the stage where we simply see, hear or otherwise become conscious of it in a general way, without going into its specifics or details. In other words, in *darshan* we are only conscious of the existence of something, without going into further details or having knowledge as to its size, colour, etc.

Thus, *darshan* is the first stage of awareness, i.e. the stage of intuitive awareness, it may be called detail-less awareness. Cognition of details, which happens subsequently, consists of *jnana* (knowledge). Since the obscuring *karmas* (those obscuring *darshan* and *jnana*) are entirely absent in perfect, enlightened souls (*kevalis*), *darshan* and *jnana* can both arise at the same time, like the sudden (not gradual) illumination of every object when the sun appears in a cloudless sky. The clouds represent the *karmas* that obscure

darshan and *mana* ⁹⁴

While consciousness, which is the essential nature of self (*svabhava*), remains its inalienable and integral part in all stages and three periods (past, present and future) of its existence, attachment, aversion, and anger, etc passions are adventitious and accidental, and are the real enemies of the pure nature of the self. The main problem is to conquer the negative emotions or passions, which delude our true being. In order to conquer those negative emotions, it is necessary to practice self-restraint, carefulness and spiritual discipline of self-analysis, introspection, such as *pratikraman*, etc, with a view to remain free from attachment and passions. Daily practice of these methods of self-discipline can alone ensure durable happiness and peace.

Complementarity of different viewpoints

In the last *gatha* of *Nyamsara*, Kundakunda has stated that he composed this treatise with the object of self-contemplation (*ny bhavana nimitta*) and it is said to be free from all inconsistencies, misunderstandings and shortcomings, including earlier ones (NS, 187). This statement is quite significant. It indicates that Kundakunda was well aware that some statements in his earlier work, *Samayasara*, might create some misunderstandings in regard to his ethico-spiritual viewpoints, especially *nishchaya* and *vyaavahara nayas*. He, therefore, sought to clarify in this treatise the true significance and value of *vyaavahara charitra* (conduct), consisting of non-violence, etc rules of moral conduct, and *pratikraman*, etc self-disciplinary methods of *nishchaya charitra* and to remove any inconsistency or misunderstanding that might exist in people's minds pertaining to them or in regard to his ethico-spiritual *nayas* particularly *nishchaya* and *vyaavahara* viewpoints.

Like any *naya* (standpoint), *nishchaya-naya* and *vyaavahara naya* are ways of comprehending reality only from one particular point of view and knowledge derived from a *naya*, therefore, is partial and incomplete. However, these *nayas* (viewpoints) are correct from their respective points of view. *Vyaavahara naya* describes the self as doer and experienter of external worldly objects, while *nishchaya naya* is concerned with the conditioned, defiled psychic

or mental state of the empirical self in its worldly existence, that the empirical self is associated with *karma-upadhi*, both material-*karma* and psychic-*karma* cannot be denied and hence the correctness of both *vyavahara naya* and *nishchaya-naya* has to be accepted. That the empirical self is *potentially* divine and has the capability to regain its intrinsic purity, unalloyed and undefiled state and become the pure self or supreme soul (*paramatma*), provided it makes earnest efforts in the right direction, is also true and, therefore, *shuddha naya* too is correct.

The present condition of the empirical self, however, is not pure, but it can attain purity by eradicating the impurities of attachment, aversion, passions, etc. One standpoint (*naya*) should not deny the truthfulness or correctness of the other point of view. That is why the commentator of *Nyamsara* finds no contradiction (*aurodha*) between *nishchaya* and *vyavahara naya* (commentary on NS *gatha* 187). He emphasizes that the teaching of reliance on only one *naya* is not worth accepting, only teaching which relies on both the standpoints is *grahya* (acceptable) (commentary on NS *gatha* 19).⁹⁵

Amrtachandra, whom the commentator of *Nyamsara*, has quoted 15 times in this work, also emphatically asserts that only that person achieves the full benefit of the teaching of enlightened souls who, having fully understood the true nature of both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya*, becomes *madhyastha*,⁹⁶ i.e. does not take side of either of them by being attached to one and despising, ignoring, negating or rejecting the other. One should not obstinately stick to any of the two standpoints because of prejudice or pre-inclination, but remain open-minded. *Anekanti*, he says, reconciles the contradictions amongst different one-sided views and synthesizes all partial truths. The difficult-to-be-removed ignorance of people can be dispelled by the proper exposition of both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* aspects of things.⁹⁷

Shuddha naya makes us aware that the present defiled state of the empirical self is not its *svabhava* (intrinsic nature), that the impurities of attachment, aversion and passions are adventitious and can be gotten rid of by adopting proper methods of self-discipline, which are described as *avashyakas* (essential duties un-

dertaken by self on its own), such as *pratikraman* (repentance for past sins and misdeeds), *pratyakhyan* (renunciation of or resolve to avoid particular thought activities and actions in future), *alochana* (confession), *prayashchitta* (expiation), *kayotsarg* (relinquishment of attachment to the body), *param samadhi* (supreme equanimity), and *param bhakti* (enlightened devotion) After the eradication of impurities, one can regain the intrinsic purity of the self (*svabharuc* or natural condition)

In *Pravachanasara*, Kundakunda emphatically asserts that enlightened conduct, anchored on enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge is capable of ensuring prosperity, high status, pleasures, good and comfortable life in the world provided one is desirous of them and is attached to them, but one can attain enduring happiness and bliss of liberation when one is non-attached and free from passions, etc.⁹⁸ Haribhadra likewise states that moral and spiritual discipline leads to *abhyudaya* (prosperity in the world) if it is done out of reverence and love or attachment. But if that discipline is undertaken as a duty with no motive or attachment whatsoever, it leads to salvation.⁹⁹

Thus, enlightened vision (*darshan*), and knowledge (*jnana*) of the worldly affairs and moral conduct (*vyavahara dhanitra*) can help a person to achieve success in his worldly existence, i.e. position (high status) power, prosperity and wealth, etc. in society. We, however, find that a wealthy person, even though enjoying fleeting pleasures of the senses, is not always or necessarily happy, because durable happiness or joy is an internal state of the mind and does not depend on external goods, services or worldly objects. It depends on mental disposition of compassion, friendliness, benevolence, self-control, etc. and peace of mind, i.e. equanimity, which is the essential nature of the soul.

Intrinsic purity of the self

Happiness or peace, according to Jainism, is not accidental in life, it is the very nature of the self in its pure, untainted state. One has to realize that state. Perfection consists in regaining this state. Here one may ask how can one say that the nature of the self is peaceful? The reply is given by citing the example of wa-

ter The nature of water is *sheetalata* (coolness) It becomes hot if we put the utensil filled with water on an oven, heater or fire However, after the utensil is taken off from the oven, the water again becomes cool after some time, i.e. regains its nature of coolness Likewise, one may be agitated, become angry, on certain occasions and for certain duration or period of time, but cannot remain angry day in and day out It shows that the nature of the self, in its pure state, is to remain in peace and happiness, though this state of peace and happiness is disturbed because of the self's entanglement or association with karma, which is the cause of passions, desires, etc

Kundakunda's teachings can be summed up in three maxims Firstly, one should abstain from *ashubha* (unwholesome thoughts, pursuit of one's selfish desires with complete disregard to the well being of others, and sinful activities (*ashubha* or *ashubha bhavanam parihara* (NS, 66) The evil (*ashubha*) psychic exertion or attentiveness (*upayoga*), he states, must be completely abandoned because as a result of that one lacks even a grain of righteous conduct (*dharma*) and the self becomes a rogue or an animal, is always beset with thousands of pains, and strays incessantly (*Pravachanasara* 12, and Amrtachandra's commentary thereon) Secondly, one should perform *shubha* (wholesome thoughts and righteous, moral conduct, i.e. *vyavahara dharma*) activities (NS, 55) Thirdly, one should endeavour to purify internal *bhavas* or thought activities such as passions, etc through *pratikraman*, etc self-disciplinary methods (i.e. observe *nishchaya dharma*) (NS, 77-158), with a view to realise the intrinsic purity, peace and happiness of the supreme state of self-realization In order to realize the supreme state of the pure self, however, one has to transcend not only *ashubha* but also *shubha*, because attachment or entanglement with *shubha* also causes bondage of karmas, which leads to mundane wanderings and is destructive of one's independence (SS, 154 and 146-147)

The commentator of *Nyamasara*, Padmaprabha Maladharideva, (in his commentary on NS *gatha* 187) confidently asserts that those who understand this *adbhutam shastra* (a treatise containing exposition of the unmanifest intrinsic, pure nature of the soul, i.e.

paramatma-samipya) considering both *nishchaya* and *vyavahara nayas* as complementary and not contradictory (*aurodhena*), and practise enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct are sure to attain indestructible happiness, which is supersensuous and incomparable

Path of salvation

The path of liberation consists of enlightened world-view (*samyak darshan*), enlightened knowledge (*samyak jñāna*) and enlightened conduct (*samyak dharma*). Enlightened world-view is the source of enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct. This vision of a three-fold (the three together) path challenges other schools of thought which focus on only one or other of the three as the means to liberation.

Thus, according to *Niyamsara*, "*niyam*" is the path of liberation, consisting of enlightened world-view, i.e. comprehensive outlook or vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, and its fruit is salvation, liberation or the fullest development of all the potentialities of the individual. The work also lays great emphasis on self-restraint and methods of self-discipline, such as repentance of past mistakes, resolve not to repeat misdeeds in future, acknowledgement of present faults, etc., with a view to purify the self of its defects of attachment, aversion, passions, etc. It points out that all those, who have attained perfection or Godhood, i.e. infinite knowledge, infinite happiness, etc., have done so by relying on their own efforts, rather than by depending on any supernatural being or God's grace.

Niyamsara makes it quite clear that salvation, the highest goal of human endeavour, is to be attained through self-discipline, hence the title of the book *Salvation through Self Discipline*. While quite a few religions believe that for salvation one requires God's grace or the help and succour from the so-called sovereign Lord of the Universe, Jainism lays emphasis on independence and self-reliance and holds that *jīva* (self) is quite capable of working out its own salvation without the help or intervention of any other entity.

Meaning of Salvation

"Salvation," K. Satchidananda Murty points out, "presupposes that someone or something has to be saved and saving must be from something, someone, a condition or state, and finally the saved becomes someone or something or enters into another condition or state" He observes "Except theistic Vedanta, the other philosophies do not attach any importance to God in the scheme of salvation. Some deny him, and even those who admit him do not think that faith in him and worship of him are necessary for salvation."

Salvation, K. S. Murty further states, is a state of consciousness in which man experiences with certainty that he has nothing to fear in life or after death. It is consequently "an awareness of peace, security and contentment." One who has attained salvation leads a way of life different from others, "not in externals but inward", he differs from other human beings "in his dispassion and detachment" ¹⁰¹

Salvation signifies freedom from enslaving desires and passions. What drives a person in his search for salvation is the attainment of freedom from want and insufficiency and intrinsic purity of the self. True salvation is fulfillment, peace, life in all its fullness. It is to be who you are, to feel within you the good that has no opposite, the joy of Being that depends on nothing outside itself. True salvation is a state of freedom — from fear, from suffering, from a perceived state of lack and insufficiency and therefore from all wanting, needing, grasping, and clinging. It is freedom from compulsive thinking, from negativity and above all from past and future as a psychological need ¹⁰²

Different Conceptions of Salvation

While all Indian philosophies are optimistic in the sense they believe salvation or liberation from the conditions of mundane existence, which are far from satisfactory and full of suffering, misery and tension, etc., is possible. There are three different conceptions of salvation.

Samkhya and Advaita Vedanta

Samkhya and Advaita Vedanta believe in the absolutely unmodifying (*aparinam*), static changeless (*kutastha*) eternal principle or entity (soul or self). They hold that we (individual selves) "are already free and that bondage is imaginary" ¹⁰³ This assertion or standpoint raises several questions. If there is no modification or change anywhere, Akalanka observes, "there can be no cause or effect anywhere there can be no right actions or wrong actions, merit or demerit, bondage, transmigration, or liberation, or the agent, the self" ¹⁰⁴ The concepts of bondage and liberation, *punya* (virtue) and *papa* (vice) lose all their relevance if we exclusively recognize Advaita-*ekanta* (absolute non-duality) as constituting the nature of substance ¹⁰⁵ If there is no bondage, then why we notice people undergoing suffering and unhappiness and why should anyone make efforts to get rid of their suffering, shortcomings and limitations, and try to attain salvation.

In support of the Samkhya and Advaita Vedanta view, the following two arguments are advanced by K. S. Murty: "If we are not already free or if we did not know freedom, how are we able to think of it? If freedom is not our real estate, our authentic nature, our true condition, may we not be separated from it again even if we attain it?" ¹⁰⁶

In reply to the first of these arguments, it may be said that even though the intrinsic nature of the self is free and the self has the potentiality to be free, but it is not "already free," that in its mundane existence in the world, the empirical self is found in bondage, subject to limitations. Since the self, even in its worldly existence, is endowed with consciousness, it has the intrinsic capacity to think, know and experience its intrinsic freedom and its potential as well as its miserable plight.

As regards the first part of the second argument, we have already stated in reply to the first argument that freedom is the intrinsic nature of the self. As for the second part of the second argument, advanced by K. S. Murty, it might be said that the defilements, distortions, and impurities in the soul, arising out of *karma upadhi* (association or conditioning of the karmic dirt or particles, which are foreign substance), are adventitious, not part

of intrinsic nature, and hence they can be separated, that like the burnt seed, once separated and destroyed they cannot stick to the soul again, and that with the cause of bondage having been destroyed and the intrinsic purity and freedom once regained, it cannot be besmirched by the impurities again and be bound again.

The Buddhist conception

Buddhism denies the existence of a permanent or substantial self (*nairatmyavada*) and believes in the principle of momentariness (*ksharikavada*). It holds that to think that there is a real thing or being, called soul, is the cause of all bondage, and unless we get rid of this false bondage, and unless we get rid of this false notion, we cannot be free.¹⁰⁷ It argues that when this idea of a real entity or being is dissected, it is found it refers to nothing; it is like peeling off an onion layer after layer and finally nothing is found underneath. So, one becomes free when one gets rid of the notion that one is a real being (*sakayadrshti*), that one can enter into relations with others and that one can possess this or that, and that one can become or has not become something else. Buddhism, thus, teaches the way to *nirvana*.¹⁰⁸

The above-mentioned contention of Buddhism violates the very premise, mentioned by K. S. Murty earlier, that salvation presupposes that someone or something has to be saved and that saved becomes someone or something. Moreover, the Buddhist contention in regard to momentariness is not only inconsistent with the principle of causal efficiency, which is the criterion of reality which has to be "both permanent and transitory", but also makes the "continuity of personal life impossible, and consequently the continuity of present life into the future and the necessity of the law of karma that the performer of good or bad act will have to bear the consequence become impossible of explanation".¹⁰⁹

The Jaina concept

The third approach or way of attaining salvation is Jaina conception of soul or consciousness. According to Jainism, *jiva* or self is not an absolutely unmodifying (*aparivartam*), static or

changeless (*katashya*) entity but is always *parinama* or evolvent. As a result, in spite of its constant change or *parinama*, "it keeps up its stability or character as an identical substance in and through its change or *parinama*" ¹¹⁰ It is characterized by permanency in the midst of change. The self binds itself through its own wrong or deluded perceptions, thoughts, and mental states or psychic dispositions of attachment, aversion, passions etc. and also frees itself through its own efforts.

Affirming the necessity of a real being or entity of an abiding nature, K. S. Murty remarks

In the midst of the diversity of experiences one finds a unity; actions and thoughts have to originate from and be guided by a core or a centre, recognition, memory, dreams, trance and extrasensory perception indicate that there can be experience even in the absence of the body, and in thought and language one finds the body to be something distinct from oneself. This unity, core, centre, agent and subject is the soul. When we discriminate it from the body and thereafter act on the basis of this insight we become free. We cannot be involved in *samsara* if we know we can keep ourselves away from it and accordingly take effective steps [of self-restraint and self-discipline] ¹¹¹

This is what the realistic philosophy of Jainism stands for. For achieving salvation, the soul has to purify itself of its defects and limitations by leading a life of moral and spiritual discipline based on enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge.

Various Paths of Salvation

Some of the philosophical systems hold the view that salvation can be obtained either by just right knowledge of the soul (*jnana marg*) or by devotion/worship of God (*bhakti marg*) alone. Some others hold that it can be attained only by the path of action (*karma marg*), i.e. leading a life of service of others and performing actions for the welfare of the world, or by a

combination of any of the two, such as devotion and moral life, action and knowledge, or devotion combined with right knowledge. There are still others who hold that salvation can be attained by a combination of all the three faculties of the self, i.e. the three aspects of consciousness, viz. affective, cognitive and willing or activity.

Bhakti marg

Bhakti marg (way) involves dependence on the grace of an external, super-natural entity, commonly called as God. A *bhakta* (devotee) on the path of devotional service to God cultivates humility through servitude and self-surrender to God and depends solely upon His Grace.¹¹² Jainism, on the other hand, lays emphasis on independence and self-reliance. Since the self alone is responsible for all the impurities and defects in self (*atma* or soul), including egoism (*ahamkara*) and attachment to sense objects (*manatva*), identification of the self with the body and the senses, the self alone can remove those defects and purify itself through self-discipline. Also, we have no control over others, only our own efforts are within our control. Moreover, the Jain conception of enlightened vision (*samyak darshan*) is quite different from the concept of *bhakti*. Furthermore, *samyak darshan* alone is not enough, it is to be accompanied by enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct because the three together alone constitute the path of salvation.

Jnana marg

While a large number of philosophies declare that salvation can be achieved through knowledge,¹¹³ there is no unanimity among them as to what constitutes right knowledge, or what is the criteria for judging it. What one of them considers as right knowledge is not so for the others. Each considers itself to be the truth, and emphasizes that others cannot lead to salvation.¹¹⁴ Considering that reality is quite complex and of variable nature, which is said to be many-sided or multi-faceted, i.e. endowed with diverse and even contradictory characteristics coexisting in the same object as inalienable part thereof, the Jain concept of

anekant seeks to avoid categorical, one-sided assertions or judgements in that regard. So, one may be true from his own point of view and wrong from the point of view of others, while both may be right from their respective points of view. Moreover, Jainism emphasizes that knowledge becomes enlightened knowledge only when it is preceded and accompanied by enlightened view. Further, enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge influence behaviour, while behavioural change or enlightened conduct, in turn, influences the other two, the three aspects of consciousness, viz. the affective, feeling or emotional aspect, the cognitive aspect and the conation, willing or activity aspect, are interactive, affect one-another and more or less act in unison. The three together constitute the way to salvation.

Refuting the view of Samkhya system of philosophy which states that “*ajnana* (ignorance, want of knowledge or even slight ignorance) necessarily causes bondage and knowledge (*jnana*) leads to *moksha* (liberation or salvation)”, Jaina philosophers point out that the knowable things (*jneya*) being infinite, ignorance or lack of knowledge in regard to some or the others will always remain and it is not possible to have knowledge of everything. In that condition, it will not be possible for anyone to get rid of bondage and attain salvation. Accordingly, Jainism holds that “bondage is caused by ignorance if there is *moha* (delusion or infatuation), but not from ignorance where *moha* is disappeared. In this way, it is possible to attain salvation when one is free from *moha*, even with slight or little knowledge (*alpa jnana*) but not where *moha* exists”¹¹⁵

It is worth recalling that *mohanaya* karma are energies or forces which are of two kinds: (1) *darshan-mohanaya* (view-deluding), which distort enlightened vision and (2) *charitra mohanaya*, which causes delusion in the form of attachment and passions and obstruct enlightened or right conduct. This karma is considered to be the greatest obstacle in the path of salvation.

According to one Jaina text, deluded-view (*mithya darshan* or *moha*) is the king, *mumakar* (muneness or attachment to things) and *ahamkar* (ego or I-ness) are its two sons or its *senapati* (commanders-in-chief or lieutenants), its minister is *mithya jnana* (wrong or perverted knowledge), which executes the orders of *moha* and

ministers to the needs, desires, and requirements of the deluded-view, i.e. it acts as a handmaid to the likes and dislikes of his master (*moha*). *Mamakar* and *ahamkar*, being brothers, support each other

Mamakar is defined as identification or sense of attachment with one's body, etc., e.g. this is my body, my house, my son, etc., which, from internal, *rashobaya* and *shuddha nayas* (standpoints) are external and other (*para*) and quite different from the self (*sva*). Similarly, from the substance point of view (*dravyarthika* point of view) identification of the self with various forms of modifications of the self, such as I am a king, I am poor, I am a child, I am an adult, I am an old man, etc. is *ahamkar*. Each of these two, viz. *mamakar* and *ahamkar*, give rise to attachment (*raga*) and aversion (*dvesha*), which in turn, give rise to passions and quasi-passions. As a result of these passions, the *yoga* (the activities of mind, body and speech) become active or operational and, infected or stained with passions, lead to sinful acts, such as violence, falsehood, etc. and karmic bondage ¹¹⁶

Karma marg

Those who advocate the path of action (*karma-yoga*), the technique of right action), emphasize the idea of self-less action, doing good to others, serving others and love of one's fellows, mankind or humanity. Various arguments are advanced in support of this love or service of fellow human beings. Theists and Advaita Vedantins argue that "One can love others only when one believes God exists and is their common father. Men can mutually love one another only if they believe they are fellow creatures of the same creator. It is impossible to love one another if there be no God" ¹¹⁷. This implies that in order to love and serve others, one must have faith in God, a super-natural entity, which provides the only rationale, justification or basis of doing good to others. The Christian teaching that love of God means love of one's neighbours also seems to support the above contention. It is said that the greatest problem why people are not able to love others, serve others or perform action for the good or benefit of others is the egoistic self, the only 'wrong' in

being is the ego.

"The true value of a human being," Albert Einstein stated, "is determined primarily by the measure and the sense in which he has attained liberation from the self."¹¹⁸ But how to effect this liberation from the self, i.e. liberate the self of its egoism, or transform the egoistic "I" to altruistic or magnanimous self and who is to effect this transformation are the pertinent questions of great relevance. It is easy to tell others to change, to behave properly but very difficult to change oneself. The supreme soul (*paramatma*), Lord *Jiva* (the conqueror of internal enemies) may serve as an example, as a model and an ideal and may at best serve as merely an instrument, a guide, a subsidiary or external cause (*varatta karana*) or help but the principal, main or internal cause (*upadana karana*) is the *jiva* (individual soul) itself, who has to uplift or elevate himself by his own strenuous efforts. In other words, *jiva*, the empirical self, has to liberate itself of its own egoism by itself through its own efforts in order to realise its intrinsic purity, i.e. self-realisation, and become Supreme Soul (*Paramatma*) itself.

Kundakunda, therefore, makes a clear distinction between the empirical self (*jiva*) and the pure or transcendental soul (*atman* or soul). He repeatedly emphasizes that *raga* (attachment or desire), *dvesha* (aversion) and *moha* (delusion) are the greatest enemies of the soul, the pure or transcendental self. From the empirical point of view, the *jiva*, associated or conditioned by material (non-soul, *ajiva* or non-living) *karman*, becomes the agent of actions and experiences pain and pleasure. It can become pure self (*shuddha atma* or supreme soul) by cleansing the self of the impurities of attachment, aversion, passions, etc. and as a result thereof getting rid of material *karman* also, by his own strenuous efforts of self-discipline.

The greatest enemy of soul in this regard is *moha* (delusion or infatuation) and its two powerful lieutenants *ahankara* (ego or I-ness) and *manakar* (*manatva*, mineness or *asakti*, i.e. attachment to objects and persons). The self itself is responsible for its own conditioning by *moha*, which prevents the understanding of the true nature of the self and leads to identification of the self with

the body, and sensual pleasures, therefore it alone can undo the conditioning of *karman* and achieve conquest over *moha*. Since the cause of egoism and contraction of impurities and defects in itself is the self, the self alone can rectify and remove the defects and impurities by self-discipline. No outside force or power can perform that task for him and bring about purification in him.

Self as its own friend and foe

Therefore, Jain texts emphasize that while the self is the greatest enemy of the self, it is also the greatest friend of the self. "Self is the begetter of both happiness and sorrow; it is its own friend when it treads the path of righteousness and is its own enemy when it acts otherwise."¹¹⁹ It is also declared that the self alone is the Supreme Soul (*appa so paramappa*),¹²⁰ an unmistakable declaration of the independence of the soul, and that only by self-reliance, a regime of moral and spiritual discipline, can the self transcend its egoistic and selfish nature and attain purification, perfection or salvation.

The same sense is conveyed in the Buddhist aphorism "*appa divo bhava*,"¹²¹ i.e. be your own light or guide, i.e. rely on yourself. The *Gita* (6.5) also affirms "*udbharet atmana atmanam*" and that "*atma eva hi atmano bandhu atma eva ripu atmanah*," i.e. let the self liberate itself by itself, that the self alone is its own friend, the self alone is its own enemy; from the negative aspect, it is like an enemy, while from the positive aspect, it is like a friend. This emphasizes in the clearest language possible not only a distinction between *jiva*, the empirical self and *atman*, the transcendental pure soul, but also the need for self-discipline in moral and spiritual practice. A. Parthasarathi observes

If you wish to evolve spiritually you must work for it on your own. Books, teachers and *gurus* can give you helpful material and guidance but they cannot replace your personal efforts necessary for the process of evolution. Evolution or devolution does not depend on external forces and environmental conditions. It depends on your personal concerted effort. As with scholastic education or physical

exercise you cannot delegate spiritual evolution to others. You will have to do it yourself ¹²²

The apparent discrepancy in the description of *atman* as both friend and foe indicates that "the original nature of *atman* is pure, calm and not agitated" ¹²³ It also distinguishes between the empirical self, which is under the strong grip of *moha* (delusion) and controlled by enslaving desires and passions because of the misguided and wrong identification of the self with the body and the senses, and the transcendental or supreme self. The nature of this supreme soul (*paramatma*) is described in the next verses of the *Gita* (6 6-7). It is stated that the supreme self is self-controlled (*jit atmanah*) and remains unaffected, balanced and peaceful, i.e. unagitated in both favourable and adverse or pleasant and unpleasant objective conditions or external circumstances, and also in subjective, internal, psychic, mental states or thought processes, i.e. he is alike in cold and heat, in pleasure and pain, and in honour and dishonour ¹²⁴ Kundakunda has expressed the same idea when he defined *dharmā* (the intrinsic nature of the self) as equanimity (*sama*) and this equanimity is described as "a state-of-evolution (*parinama*) of the soul," in which it is free from *moha* (infatuation or delusion) and *kshobha* (all kinds of emotional agitation or mental disturbance, arising out of desires and passions) ¹²⁵

There appears to be a discrepancy between the description of the *Gita* (6 5) and that given in the *Gita* (18 66), which confidently asserts "Give up all other means/duties/paths and surrender all unto Me alone. I shall free you from all sins. Rest assured, do not grieve." It seems that while statement in the *Gita* (6 5) is made from the point of view of *karma yoga* (path of action), the assertion in the *Gita* (18 66) expresses the view from the viewpoint of *bhakti* (devotion, signifying total dependence on and complete surrender to God). Clarifications to the effect that devotion implies firm conviction and dedication, renunciation of all hesitation, fear, pride, etc. devoid of thoughts of egoism (I-ness) and me and mine (*mamata*) in regard to body and worldly objects and performance of action comprising of essential duties

free from selfish or personal intent or desires and realisation that *paramatma* (supreme soul) can only be truly relied upon, can help to minimize the intensity of contradiction between the two statements of the *Gita*. It cannot, however, completely resolve the contradiction so long as the belief in the concept of theistic God, the Lord of the Universe, and *Brahman* (which is conceived as the Absolute, one without a second and as a cosmic principle) is insisted upon.

However, if the "I" in the *Gita* (18 66) is understood to mean the transcendental self, (*atma eva brahman*, the soul itself is *brahman*, the supreme soul or *paramatman*) divinity or "Krishna consciousness" within, which represents the intrinsic purity and is the true friend (*bandhu*) of the self (*atma*), in contrast to the deluded self, who identifies itself with the body and the senses and is controlled by the enslaving desires and passions, i.e. contaminated and bound by karmas, the real foe or enemy (*ripu*) of *atma* (soul), then the message of the *Gita* (18 66) becomes crystal clear "Give up dependence on others, rely on your own true self, you will be freed from all your sins, shortcomings and weaknesses, have self-confidence, do not waver"

Vedanta and the love of others

The concept that one should love others and perform actions for their good just because we are all fellow creatures of the same Creator does not appear so appealing or attractive, even to those who believe in such a God, that they can be expected to give up their egoism and selfish concerns easily and of their own accord. As the Talmud scholar Hillel states "If I do not care for myself, who else will?" Therefore, the advocates of Advaita Vedanta proclaim the concept of "Grand Selfishness" (*brahman*) as the way out from the egoistic self. They argue that if, as some modern psychologists believe, that man is "by nature" selfish it is because he has (is) self. It is, therefore, impossible to remove selfishness.

Hence, the Vedantin philosophers speculated on replacing "petty selfishness" (*ahankara*, egoism) with 'Grand Selfishness' (which in other words signifies "the sublimation of egoistic

feeling") '*aham brahmasmi*' (I am *brahman*) is identification with the 'Grand Selfishness' Again, "since everyone loves one's self, the Br Up [*Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*] (4 5 6) clearly says 'Lo verily not for the love of all, all is dear (to man), for the love of self alone, is all dear (to him)' *na 'ya, are, sarvasya kamaya sarvam priyam bhavati, atmanastu kamaya sarvam priyam bhavati*" The import of this is that the love one bears to anything is to be regarded as an aspect of the love one bears to one's own self We like other persons and things because S(s)elf is mirrored in them.¹²⁶

A similar argument is also advanced by another champion of Advaita Vedanta, George Kotturan, who claims "It is not for the love of the neighbour that the neighbour is important, but for the love of the self that [the] neighbour is important It is not a question of doing good or wrong to one's neighbour, it is the question of doing good or wrong to one's own self"¹²⁷

Commenting on these remarks, Nicholas F Gier states that it is hard to believe that Kotturan does not see how problematic it is to define the value of the neighbour in terms of self-love *Ahimsa* and compassion must be based on a relational, other-regarding philosophy, rather than a self-centred mysticism Kotturan might respond by arguing that the distinction between the inner and the outer is an illusion, but this appears to contradict our ordinary experiences of the world Kotturan would also counter that it is for the sake of an all-pervading *atman* that we love our neighbour But if *atman* is the same for all the people—neither plural nor individual—then it cannot be an agent in the world as either a subject or object of love¹²⁸

George Kotturan further contends that the concept of the Absolute *Brahman* or "non-dualism makes love easy, because there is nothing easier than loving one's own self" Commenting on this assertion, Nicholas F Gier observes

The problem, however, is that, according to Shankar, we actually do not have a true self of our own In his view love must amount to *brahman* loving himself, but even this cannot be correct because, again, ultimate *Brahman*, *nirguna Brahman*, is totally devoid of qualities The great moral exhortations of

the *Upanshads* make no sense if non-dualism in this sense is true. To be self-controlled, to give to others, and to be compassionate (see *Brhadaranyaka* 5 2 3) are intelligible imperatives only if there are individual selves who have reciprocal relations with other beings. *Upanshadic* monism is shallow and empty of meaning if it is not interpreted to include the rich diversity of individual lives and situations. *Upanshadic* monism is better conceived as a panentheism that resacralizes the world rather than a transcendental monism that desacralizes it.¹²⁹

Karma yoga in its true sense

Karma yoga, in its true sense, is the transformation of oneself through strenuous efforts of external self-restraint and internal self-discipline. A person who is free from impurities and passions can never think of doing any harm to anybody. His actions will naturally cater to the well-being of others. Kundakunda divides enlightened conduct into two parts, viz *nishchaya dhantra* and *vyaavahara dhantra*, of which the former is the cause of steadiness and stability of the latter. *Vyaavahara dhantra*, consisting of *vrata* (five vows of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, limitation of possessions and sex-fidelity), *samati* (carefulness in walking, speaking, eating, etc.) and *gupti* (self-restraint of mind, body and speech), as described by Kundakunda in *Nyamsara*, purifies one's external moral conduct practiced in relation to others. These rules also act as a subsidiary cause in the subsidence of passions, i.e. purification of the internal psychic disposition and thought processes.

Five rules of moral conduct *ahimsa* (non-violence), etc. are essential principles of harmonious living in society. They also ensure avoidance of any kind of harm to others. They are, thus, conducive to the well-being of others, in a negative way. The positive aspects of *ahimsa* are compassion, *matr* (amity towards all beings), and kindness. Therefore, Kundakunda's works and other Jain texts, lay emphasis on compassion, friendliness towards all living beings, kindness towards the poor, needy and those who are in need of any other help, charity, etc. which directly and

in a positive way promote the well-being of others or welfare of the people. Charity (*dana*) is prescribed as one of the six essential duties of a person.

However, our external moral character, in order to be realistic and lasting, must be anchored on spiritualism, i.e. internal purity. When our self is rid of psychic dispositions of distortions or defilements of the intrinsic nature of our soul, such as attachment, aversion, passions, hatred, enmity, jealousy, etc., we will have no inclination or even any thought of doing any kind of harm to others and the well-being of others will be the natural outcome of our reformed, purified soul.

For Kundakunda, the yardstick of every activity of mind, speech or body is that it should be in accord with the best interests of the pure self, i.e. free from attachment, aversion, delusion, and passions. It should also be free of any desire or expectation of the fruit of action. Describing the *mukta-kāṁkṣita* (freedom from desires, expectation or attachment to worldly objects), component of enlightened vision, he observes "An enlightened person evinces no desire whatever in *karma-phaleṣu*, i.e. any attachment or expectation in the fruit of action, and *sarva-dharmēṣu*, i.e. having no interest and being equanimous towards various attributes of objects or things, the contradictory traits and one-sided views" (*Saṃnyāsasāra*, 230)¹³⁰ He should not desire worldly prosperity or greatness (name, fame, etc.) and should not cling to deluded views of one-sided nature (*Puruṣārtha-Siddhyupāya*, Verse 24)¹³¹

In other words, he has no desire at all in any of the foreign objects (*para-dravya*) and *para-bhava*, i.e. psychic dispositions or mental states, which are different from the intrinsic nature of self, and are defilements of or deviations from the intrinsic pure nature of the soul and are the result of association or conditioning of other objects and persons or material and psychic karma. It means that an enlightened person (*samyak-draṣṭi*) has no inclination, attachment, desire or interest in sensual pleasures, mundane pursuits or worldly objects whether be they glass or gold and in all *para-bhavas*, such as *punya* (virtue) and *papa* (vice), good and bad, joy and sorrow, pleasure and pain, honour and dishonour, praise and condemnation by others, life and death, or anything pertaining to

this world or the next world, and all one-sided viewpoints, religions and philosophies which emphasize or are concerned with only external aspects of things and not with the inner purity of the self. The enlightened person is enamoured of spiritual happiness and wants to remain contented (*tripta*), i.e. established in the supreme happiness of the pure soul, which is far beyond the gratification of senses.

Nibh-kankshita of Kundakunda is *nishkama karma* of the *Gita*, which states "Your right is in action only, never to the fruits, (*phaleshu*), let not your attachment be to inaction" (*Gita*, 2.47). Another verse in the *Gita* (2.71) observes "He [the enlightened person], who abandons all desires and moves about without yearning for anything, without the sense of 'I' (*nirahankara*) and 'mine' (*nirmama*), attains peace." In other words, he is free from egoism and attachment. In Jainism, the word "*moha*", as has already been mentioned, includes both *ahankara* (ego or I-ness) and *mamatra* (sense of mine). The sense of Kundakunda's "*sarva dharmeshu*," is also contained in the *Gita* (2.45), which speaks of being free from the three attributes (three *gunas* of *tamas* (indolent, inactive), *rajas* (passionate, involved in desire-prompted activities of the world), and *sattva* (one characterized by deep attachment to serenity), of *nirdundho*, i.e. free from the pairs of opposites, such as profit and loss, good and bad, joy and sorrow, honour and dishonour, and of remaining established in the purity of the self (*atmanan*).

Validity of three separate paths of salvation?

While the path of action (action without attachment) of both of Kundakunda (*nibh kankshita karma*, SS, 230, having no expectation in the fruit of action, i.e. *karma-phaleshu*) and that of the *Gita* (*nishkama-karma*, having no attachment to the fruit of action, *Gita*, 2.47) seems quite similar, there is difference as to whether one can attain perfection by action alone. The *Gita*, in line with its belief that all the three paths, viz. of *bhakti* (devotion/worship), *jñana* (knowledge) and *karma* (action) can separately and individually lead to salvation, affirms (*Gita*, 3.20) that "verily by action *alone* (*eva*) Janaka and others attained perfection"

Kundakunda, on the other hand, is convinced that all three (*samyak darshan, jnana* and *charitra*) together constitute the path of liberation. Thus, Kundakunda declares that "*charittam (charitra in Sanskrit) khalu dhammo (dharma in Sanskrit),*" i.e. conduct, which is in consonance or in accordance with the intrinsic nature of the self, is definitely and in the true sense is *dharma* (piety or the foremost duty), but this conduct, he clarifies, has to be anchored or based on enlightened vision and enlightend knowledge (*darshan-jnana pradhanat*)¹³²

Let us examine which of the above two approaches is more convincing or rational. The rationale of three separate paths to liberation rests on two grounds. firstly it is stated that just as one can reach the destination, say a mountain top, by various routes, north, south etc. one can also attain the objective of liberation by following any of the three paths, viz. that of worship, knowledge, or action.

In reply to this contention, it may be said that the example of reaching the mountain-top through different routes need not necessarily hold good in the case of liberation being attained by any of the three paths. The similes, metaphors, illustrations (*drashtanta*) and examples are often used by people in discourses to prove one's point and make it convincing. But example is an example, it is *ekadesha*, i.e. it conveys a specific meaning in a certain context and holds good in a particular case. It need not be applicable in other circumstances, having different context. Thus, in the present case, *moksha* (liberation) is not situated at a fixed place that one can reach that place by travelling through different directions or paths. *Moksha* is a state of consciousness, comprising three aspects or faculties, viz. affective or emotional, cognitive or intellectual and willing or activity. Each of these aspects are inter-related and inter-active, they constitute unity and form one single path of liberation. The example, which is applicable to external, physical plane, may not necessarily be relevant to internal, psychic plane.

Secondly, it is argued that we notice, that people in the world have certain inherent tendencies and inclinations, innate aptitudes and urges, distinct likes and dislikes, which constitute his or her

individualistic nature. Thus, in some there may be predominance of thinking, in others a preponderance of emotions, while some others may be more inclined towards action. Accordingly, it is contended or claimed that for those having predominance of thinking, the path of knowledge (*jñāna mārg*) is more appropriate; for people more emotional in nature the path of worship (*bhakti mārg*) may be better; and for those inclined towards action, the path of action (*karma mārg*) is more appropriate.

In response to this argument, it may be stated that while it is no doubt true that the inclinations and preferences of various people differ depending on their circumstances, including past *karmas*, it is nonetheless a fact of life that all beings are endowed with all the three aspects of consciousness, viz. feeling or affective, cognitive, and willing or action, the proportion or ratio of one or the other of these three faculties may be greater in some and lesser in others. These three aspects of consciousness are quite significant from the point of modern psychology; they affect one another and are closely related, particularly emotion and impulse to action. For instance, we usually say that anger or fear or disgust makes us do this or that, or impels us to act. The three faculties are integral parts of one single entity called consciousness, they cannot be segregated or separated into water-tight compartments. In fact, they need to be synergised and aligned in order to lead a happy, peaceful and contented life.

It is not necessary that one should be in possession of each of these three aspects or faculties of consciousness in equal degree in order to attain liberation. As we have already mentioned that even with slight knowledge, a person, who is free from *moha*, can attain liberation. Thus, the three constituents of liberation (*samyak-darshan*, *samyak jñāna* and *samyak charitra*) which are interactive and closely related to one another constitute one unitary path to liberation. This approach has roots in psychology and, therefore, is scientific, rational and more convincing than the theory of three separate paths to salvation.

We, thus, come to the conclusion that enlightened view (*samyaktva* or *samyak-darshan*), which is free from deluded view (*upareeta abhinivesha*), that accounts for indiscriminate clinging to

wrong view due to attachment and aversion, etc., enlightened knowledge (*samyak-jñāna*), which is devoid of *samsāya* (doubt), *umoha* (delusion or perversion), and *ubhrama* (confusion, or vacillation as regards correct understanding of various view points, i.e. not having proper or balanced understanding of different standpoints and their respective contexts) (NS, 51), and enlightened conduct (*samyak-charitra*), which is free from attachment, aversion, and passions, etc., all these three constitute unity and necessarily (*nyamena*) lead to salvation. These three components, which form the path of liberation (*moksha marg*) are known as *ratna-traya* or *tri ratna* (three jewels) in Jainism.

Kundakunda's works contain a methodical exposition of the soul and its functional mechanism, particularly the nature of soul and its endeavour to achieve liberation, which is often obstructed by *karman*, both material *karman* (*dravya karma*) and psychic *karman* (*bhava karma* comprising of attachment, aversion and passions), resulting therefrom. *Niyamsara* contains a systematic exposition of Kundakunda's philosophy within the preview of *tri-ratna*.

This *tri-ratna* concept is quite unique from all other thoughts in relation to its formation, not perceived but based on real life existence¹³. It recognizes the tendency of the organism as an integrated, organismic whole, rather than as a patchwork of separately operating parts and to think holistically rather than atomistically.

Since the three components (*samyak darshan, jñāna* and *charitra*) of the *tri ratna* concept represent the three faculties of human personality having roots in psychology or the three aspects of consciousness, viz. affective or emotional, cognitive or intellectual and conative, willing or activity, which are inter-related and interactive, they affect one another and without one the other cannot march forward. "The human soul," Hastings Rashdall observes, "is a trinity. Consciousness includes three elements or aspects or distinguishable activities - Thought, Feeling, and Volition or (to use a more general term) Conation, each of which is unintelligible in entire abstraction or separation from the rest"¹⁴. These are obviously not exclusive. They are not separate or distinct but

overlay or fuse with each other. Ultimately they are all facets of Being rather than parts of it.

When negativities or impurities in our emotions, thoughts and actions are removed, the alignment of the three centres, powers, faculties, elements or aspects of consciousness takes place, the transformation of mental apparatus is accomplished and enlightenment dawns. In fact, the alignment of the three aspects, viz. the emotional, intellectual and actions or *samyak-darshan, jnana* and *charitra* (enlightened view, knowledge and conduct) constitutes the whole of Jain *sadhana*, the path, the *nyaya*, which definitely and necessarily leads to peace, happiness and social well-being, salvation or liberation from all sufferings and miseries.

Since the different aspects of consciousness or the self are identical with the self or *atma* (soul), the enlightened vision or world-view, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, which are different aspects of the same self, become identical with the self. Prof. A. Chakravarti observes.

These three conjointly constitute the *moksha marga* — the path to spiritual salvation, and the *moksha marga* also must be located in the nature of the self as it is identical in nature with that of the self inasmuch as it represents a stage in the development of the self. Thus, it is clearly pointed out that the Kingdom of Heaven is within you. One who deserves to reach the goal of liberation or *moksha* has nothing to do with the non-conscious external things since he has within himself everything that is necessary to realise his purpose. The spiritual development, therefore, consists in the continuous development of the self to a higher and higher state followed by the progressive widening of knowledge till the self becomes perfect and knowledge becomes completely co-extensive with the reality. At this stage the self becomes both *Sarvajna* and *Paramatma*, the Omniscient and the Absolute Self. This is the end of *samsara* and the goal of life from which there is no return.¹³⁵

Thus Kundakunda observes "Enlightened conduct

uninfluenced or unconditioned by attachment, i.e. desire or aversion, and accompanied with enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge forms the path to liberation "¹³⁶ He further states "Know ye that the *jiva*, which (in its intrinsic purity) rests on *samyak darshan*, *mana* and *charitra* is the real self (*Sua-samaya*) But that which is conditioned by material karma is other than true self (*para-samaya*)" (*Samayasara*, *gatha*, 2) The works of Kundakunda, particularly *Niyamasara*, deals with *tri-ratna* concept of liberation in full detail According to him, one without the other two or vice versa delinks the path of liberation and, therefore, all the three jewels must be unconditionally followed in order to attain salvation

In *Niyamasara*, Kundakunda explains about the Path and the Fruit in these words "*Jinshasan* (Jain Scriptures) declare thus — the Path and the Fruit of the Path are two constituent parts Former is *niyam*, the latter is *moksha*, i.e. salvation" (NS, 2) Here, a reference to *Jinshasan* or Jain scriptures is with a purpose It means that one should follow the path in right earnest, without entertaining any desire or expectation (this is true *nib-kankshita* or desirelessness) about the result (*karma-phaleshu*) or having any doubt about it (*nib-shanku*), because it is bound to result (one must have *shraddha*, conviction, *astikya*) in peace, happiness and the well-being of all, i.e. salvation In other words, one should focus on the process, *sadhana*, *moksha-marg*, the means, the path (*niyam*), not on the end or the result The path is not a circle, it is the way Hence the title of the treatise is *Niyamasara*, which lays emphasis on the essence, the intrinsic nature of *niyam*, not *moksha-shastra* or *moksha-sara* Unless one observes the *niyam*, how can he attain *moksha sara* or *samayasara*, i.e. the essence, the intrinsic nature or the supreme state of the soul

Here it is also necessary to remind ourselves that treading the path of salvation by putting into practice this *niyam* is not an easy task. It is a long process It requires removal of impurities and negativities of all kinds, which we have accumulated in innumerable past lives, and the alignment of all the three faculties or aspects of consciousness and constant practice of self-restraint of moral conduct and *pratikraman*, etc. methods of self-discipline

In these days of quick fixes and instant results, there are people who are presenting the path of only devotion to divinity or only knowledge about the supreme self as the cable ropeway, which takes people direct from one mountain cliff to another mountain cliff or from the bottom of hill straight to the top

Such promises sound quite attractive but in actual life reaching the summit of perfection, i.e. salvation, is not so easy as it is often made out to be. It is a hard and difficult road, in which there are many bumps and ups and downs. Even in the field of external material conquest of nature, one is able to achieve success after a number of setbacks and failures. For instance, Apollo 11, carrying Neil Armstrong to the moon, was preceded by as many as 32 manned space flights — several of them near or complete failures — over a period of ten years. A number of procedures, techniques, methods, etc. had to be tried, tested and practised to perfection before success could be achieved.

The task of attaining Godhood, salvation, or inner conquest, the conquest of senses, i.e. sensual attractions and one's passions, negativities, impurities etc. is still more difficult task, all the more so because the transformation of one's inner self has to be accomplished by oneself unaided from any outside source, through repeated conscious contemplations (*bhavana*) and constant practice of external self-restraints and internal self-disciplinary methods of *pratikraman*, etc. This journey of inner self-conquest, or moral and spiritual discipline and purification of deeply entrenched deluded and negative modes or pattern of thinking, feeling and willing has to be traversed on its own, single-handed. Dependence on external help or assistance of any one (be it parents, friends, *guru*, teacher, preceptor, etc. or even God's grace) will not be productive of result in one's salvation; others can serve as an ideal or model and thereby provide inspiration, or they can impose certain restrictions or constraints on one's external behaviour but they cannot bring about your inner transformation. That task has to be performed by oneself. The path has to be traversed by oneself.

Misunderstandings in regard to *Niyamsara* and Kundakunda

There are quite a few misunderstandings, in regard to Kundakunda and *Niyamsara* which needs to be clarified

It is said that both *Niyamsara* and *Samayasara* of Kundakunda are meant only for ascetics (*monu*, recluse). This misunderstanding is based partly on an incorrect evaluation of Kundakunda's ethico-spiritual *nyayas* (standpoints) and partly because of an improper understanding of the meaning of "*shramani*". *Shramani samskriti* (system of philosophy or culture) is distinguished from Vedic and Brahmanic *samskriti*, which believed in God (*Ishtvarena*) and laid emphasis on the efficacy of sacrifice (*yajna*), etc. ceremonies and rituals and dependence on God's grace, rather than placing reliance on understanding the true nature of the self and realizing it through one's own efforts of moral and spiritual discipline. Self-reliance instils optimism in the person practicing it.

The words "*shramani*", "*samanyaka*" or "*samyaktva*" stand for a lifestyle of self-help and self-discipline based on *shrama* (one's own efforts, self-reliance), *sama* (equanimity, i.e. psychical state of remaining unperturbed in honour and dishonour, and in the company of friend and foe, in pleasure and pain, etc., equalness, equal respect for all, reverence for all living beings), and *shama* or *shaman* (control or subsidence of passions, self-restraint of mind, body and speech as signified in non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, limitation of wants, possessions and enjoyments and sex-fidelity). These qualities and characteristics are equally valuable and desirable for both laymen and ascetics. A philosophy that lays stress on these things cannot by any stretch of imagination be described as pessimistic. It is only when undue stress is laid on asceticism of purely a physical nature, consisting of bodily discomforts of extreme nature as the only way of realising salvation that the charge of pessimism can be laid as it is bound to result in disappointment.

Meaning of *shramani*

In *Pravachansara* (III 45-46), Kundakunda states that *shramans*

(ascetics) are not only those one with pure psychic attention but also those who are endowed with good (*śubha*) psychic attention and have affection for the pure self (*arhat*, etc.) At another place, Kundakunda has defined "*śraman*" as follows "*sama sattva-bandhu raggo sama suhadekho pasansarrudhasamo sama lottha-kanchano pura juyamarane samo samano*,"¹³⁷ i.e. one who is equanimous or alike toward friend and foe, alike in pleasure and pain, alike in honour and dishonour or praise and condemnation, alike in regard to sand (earth) and gold and alike in living and dying — that being is *śraman*. As *tapas* (austerity) of any kind is generally identified with asceticism, Kundakunda, in declaring that *vratavhara-charitra* of vows, carefulness (*samiti*), and *gupti* (self-restraint) constitutes *tapas*, endeavoured to give a new interpretation in regard to asceticism or *śraman*. In Jain texts, it is also clarified that "*sadhu*" means *sajjan purush*, i.e. a noble person having good moral, dispassionate character. One cannot think of a *sadhu*, *śraman*, *dhamik*, or noble person in the real sense unless he has a good moral character.

Balance between excessive formalisation and excessive interiorisation

There are people who contend that Kundakunda's works, especially *Samayasara* and *Nyamsara*, are meant only for the ascetics, and that Kundakunda laid great emphasis on asceticism. There are others such as WJ Johnson, the author of *Harmless Souls* (HS), and his reviewer Paul Dundas, who state that in the circumstances when Jainism's teachings are from its beginnings so ascetic oriented that "*prima facie*" lay Jainism "would seem to be a contradiction in terms",¹³⁸ that the "specific category of 'Jaina householder' would seem to be an anachronism",¹³⁹ and that asceticism was viewed in "purely physical terms", Kundakunda's emphasis on internal aspects of human personality, viz. the role of infatuation or delusion, attachment, desire or intention, aversion and passions, etc. in Karmic bondage and liberation from that bondage was indeed a contribution of the highest order to establish Jainism on a solid ethical and psycho-spiritual foundation.

As Johnson demonstrates, Kundakunda's doctrine of *upayoga* (conscious attentiveness) and his "internalisation",¹⁴⁰ or as his reviewer Paul Dundas terms it, "interiorisation of the various components of Jain practice and concomitant attempt to move the ascetic's ultimate concern [or any *sadhak's* or aspirant's primary concern for peace and happiness] away from his relationship with the external world toward his inner being" makes him a "reformer"¹⁴¹ (as Paul Dundas states), who is "consciously reacting against excessive formalisation, the mechanistic pursuit of physical austerity"¹⁴²

According to this analysis, "external, ascetic practice" which had become "meaningless" and "without spiritual significance had to be reinterpreted by Kundakunda." However, Kundakunda was well aware that although "inner state has precedence and conditions the outer",¹⁴³ external moral conduct of vows, carefulness, etc (*vyavahara charitra*) has its importance and value and cannot be dispensed with altogether for several reasons

Just as *himsa* (violence) against other beings, stealing, etc offences or sins against the moral rules of conduct are the "objective correlative" of the subjective state or attitude,¹⁴⁴ so also internal state of compassion, etc is reflected or externalized in acts of kindness and charity. Thus, man's relations with others, i.e. the social aspect, was not neglected. Kundakunda was the foremost philosopher and thinker, who sought to view reality of all sorts from both internal and external perspective

Vyavahara charitra or external moral conduct not only reflects internal self-restraint (control of one's impulses and animal instincts) but also ensures harmony and peace in society. The environment of social harmony and peace, in turn, is conducive to an individual's mental calmness or peace of mind. In practice, it seems, the external must precede the internal. In fact, it works both ways since one cannot observe the rules of external moral discipline "without the necessary inner purity, the very fact that one is following it demonstrates to oneself and others that he does have the requisite inner resources"¹⁴⁵

In addition to what has been stated above, the recognition of the necessity and importance of the value of external moral

discipline also ensures that Jainism does not become what Johnson calls a "private soteriology" ¹⁴⁶ Kundakunda, Paul Dundas remarks, is thus identified by Johnson as representing a "middle point between two main historic propensities within Jainism. excessive formalisation and ritualisation of behaviour which diminish the spiritual dimensions of the path and excessive interiorisation of values," ¹⁴⁷ which denies the need for external moral conduct (*vijrahara charitra*) in relation to others; conduct which facilitates individual peace and happiness and social well-being.

What is required is a pervasively holistic attitude and way of thinking. One who follows a regime of "excessive formalisation and ritualisation of behaviour", i.e. a religion consisting of a set of habits, dogmas, forms, conventional empty rituals, may be reduced to the "merely behavioral". Hence, Kundakunda emphasises and rightly so the need of "experiential," as an antidote to merely abstract and abstruse. However, this "experiential" has to be experience-based rationality in contrast to the *a priori* rationality that we have come almost to identify with rationality itself. Since there is a risk of "experiential" being reduced to "merely experiential" of the mystic type in which one is tempted to seek and indulge in his ecstasies and subjective experiences, which are then exalted as the best or even the *only* path to knowledge and enlightenment, thereby giving up all the tests and verifications of the validity of the illumination, it needs to be counterbalanced by considerations of morality, i.e. wholesome good behaviour in relation to other people and internal purity, which is free from passions.

What does the widely held belief that our conscious life consists of experiences really mean? One may say that one experiences things and in so doing extracts experiences from them. One extracts knowledge of things so to speak, out of things, and this knowledge then has things as its object. One experiences what things are; what there is to things. Thus, it is always a matter of something that is experienced. One comes to know of things; one grasps something, knowable and assertable. In other words, our conscious life consists of events in which we experience

something knowable and assertable about the conditions of things, i.e. of outer and inner things. Of course, inner experiences also belong to the region of experiences. The things we experience by no means have to be things of the outer world, they can also be things of the inner world.

When one experiences something about a person's condition, he perceives him as an aggregate of qualities that he can know and express. It is something that is totally separate from the experiences of things or objects. In other words, these are not experiences that we can designate subjectively — experience still sounds subjective — but something we can designate objectively as an event in which we participate, in a word, these are relationships. Our conscious life, thus, consists not only of experiences but of relationships¹⁴⁸ to other living beings as well as to the divinity within.

"If the goal of the Jain path [of liberation] could be reached by internal cultivation only,"¹⁴⁹ then *vyavahara dhantra* (external self-restraint or moral conduct of vows, carefulness, etc.), as also *nishchaya dhantra* (internal self-discipline comprising of *pratikraman*, etc. disciplinary methods) will become redundant, as a section of Digambara Jains, who claim themselves as the most ardent followers of Kundakunda, mistakenly believe.

On the other hand, if the objective of purification and liberation can be attained by *vyavahara dhantra* alone, the internal methods of self-discipline (*pratikraman*, i.e. repentance, etc. *nishchaya dhantra*) will have no value. Kundakunda rightly propagated the view that both *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dhantra*, anchored on enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge, are necessary in order to accomplish the desired objective of attaining supreme state of Godhood (*paramatman*).¹⁵⁰

In *Samayasara gathas* 408-411, Kundakunda emphatically states that bodily insignia or external mark either of householder or that of a homeless ascetic has no relevance as regards path to salvation, only the three jewels of enlightened vision, knowledge and conduct together constitute the path of emancipation. In *Samayasara gathas* 413-414, both the two classes of insignia (that of an ascetic as well as of a householder) are declared to be the

path of salvation from *vyavahara* point of view, but the *nishchaya* standpoint does not need, require, accept or want any kind of mark or signia whatsoever for the path of salvation. In fact, those who maintain that salvation can be obtained by subscribing to a particular class of insignia, say an ascetic, and have *mamattam* or *mamatva* (attachment or fancy) for it, thinking that asceticism alone can give *moksha* (salvation) do not know or really understand *Samayasara*, the intrinsic and essential nature of the self.

In his commentary on *Samayasara* gatha 413, Amrtachandra states that those *shraman* or their *upasaka* (worshipper or devotee), who being attached to *dravya-linga* (bodily insignia) indulges in false pride, are definitely (*kehalu*) deluded in *vyavahara*, are unaware of *nishchaya*, and can never realise ultimate truth (*paramarth-satya*), *bhaguntam* (the Supreme Self), i.e. *Samayasara* Jayasena also points out that *dravya-linga* is not the cause of salvation. In other words, "the mere outward nudity of body," J. L. Jaini remarks, "is not the path of Liberation. Even severe asceticism and suffering cannot advance a saint an inch on the path of Liberation, if he has not understood and realized his own (true) self, the essence of *Samayasara*." 151

Bifurcation of moral discipline into two categories

There has been growing tendency among Jains of all sects to divide moral and spiritual discipline into two categories (1) applicable for householders or general public and (2) applicable for ascetics. In fact, a large number of books have been written and a good deal of literature has come up dealing separately with the conduct of these two kinds of people. This artificial division verging on watertight compartmentalisation is playing havoc with the moral, social and spiritual life of the people. It is argued that an ascetic is one who practices certain number of moral rules of conduct, including *vrata* (five vows), *samiti* (five carefulness) and *gati* (three restraints of body, mind and speech), while householders are required to follow certain rules of conduct, which are of minor significance and most convenient to them.

Thus, the householders are completely relieved not only of

the practice of *pratikeraman*, etc self-disciplinary methods of *nishchaya dharitra*, but also in regard to the observance of *samati* and *gupti* (these find no place in the twelve *vratas* (vows) or six essential or obligatory duties of a householder) As far as five main *vratas* (vows) of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, limitation of wants and possessions, and sex-fidelity) are concerned, they have been divided into *maha-vratas* (major scale vows), to be observed by the ascetics, and *anu vratas* (small or minor scale vows), to be practiced by the householders Keeping the convenience of the householders and their deteriorating moral stature, even these *anu vratas* have been expunged from the list of duties of the general public and replaced, in some of the *shrirakachara granthas* (books dealing with the conduct of householders) and in most of the discourses of present-day ascetics and *Acharyas*, by abstention from five *udambara* fruits that are considered to contain living beings

It is, therefore, not without significance that Acharya Tulsī deemed it necessary to resuscitate these *anuvratas* and launch the *anu-vrata andolana* (movement) to change the trend of the times, characterized by increasing violence, immorality or non-observance of moral rules of conduct, to revive the old vision, and provide a new direction of moral and spiritual regeneration and transformation of society through the transformation or change of heart of the people

It is very pertinent and significant to note that in *Nyamsara* Kundakunda makes no distinction between *maha vratas* and *anu vratas* He also makes no mention of the twelve *vratas* (vows) or eleven *pratimas* (stages of moral and spiritual development for the householder) *Nyamsara* categorically declares that the moral conduct of *vrata*, *samati* and *gupti* is *vyarahara dharitra*, which is as much relevant, desirable and applicable to the ascetic as to the householder For instance, take the case of *trya samati* (carefulness in walking), if a person does not observe it, he may not only cause injury to other living beings but also harm himself by falling into a pit, putting his foot on a venomous snake or tumbling down on the earth by carelessly striking his foot against a stone

Likewise, if one does not observe *bhasha-samati* (carefulness in

speaking) or *uchan-gupti* (restraint of speech), he may utter disagreeable, harsh, bitter, hateful, abhorrent or contemptuous words, which are not only violative of one's own peace of mind and equanimity and spiritually harmful to oneself but also may lend anyone in trouble, lead to personal, business or political rivalry and enmity. Thus, moral behaviour (*vyavahara dharma*) comprising of *vrata*, *samati* and *gupti* are, in fact, much more useful and relevant for the householder than to the ascetic as he has more occasions and more likely to come into contact with other persons of all walks of life than an ascetic. To say or claim that this *vyavahara dharma* comprising of *vrata*, *samati* and *gupti* is not meant for or relevant to the householders or general public is, indeed, very strange and foolish.

Relevance of *nishchaya charitra* for householders

Even when it is conceded that while the moral (*vyavahara*) conduct of *vrata*, etc., as stated above, is or may be relevant for the householder, it is stated that internal, spiritual discipline of *nishchaya naya*, consisting of self-analysis of *pratikraman* (repentance), etc., discussed in much detail in *Nyamsara*, is not relevant for the householder but is meant only for the ascetic for his spiritual development. This again is incorrect and faulty reasoning for the external or social behaviour of any person cannot be modified, improved and transformed without first effecting change in one's thought patterns and attitude.

Accordingly, reflection about one's inner thought processes and practice of self-discipline consisting of *pratikraman* (repentance of one's past misdeeds and negative thoughts), *pratyakhyan* (resolve not to repeat one's past mistakes and negative thought activity in future), etc. are necessary psychological methods to reform one's attitude and thought pattern and bring about internal transformation of one's impulses and negativities. They are, therefore, equally, if not more, relevant and useful to the householder as to the ascetic. When a person says that he is sorry, he is, in fact, practising *pratikraman*, provided this sorry comes from his heart in all sincerity. It is, indeed, a matter of deep regret

that the practice of *pratikraman*, etc. methods of self-discipline has almost completely died down or absent among the Digambara Jain householders, although it is still in vogue among Shvetambara Jain householders

There is common misconception that the moral and spiritual discipline outlined in *Nyamsara* is meant only for ascetics, who are retired from life and removed from society. That discipline is in fact meant for everyone as the mental training gained through that discipline helps in keeping mind calm and intellect focused, thereby improving one's efficiency and concentration on the task at hand and ensuring success in any walk of life, including health, happiness and well-being. It also leads to social harmony and social well-being.

Kundakunda's date

There are differences about the period when Kundakunda lived among various scholars. Schubring and Nathuram Premi, date him to the second-third century A.D., E. H. Johnston places him in the neighbourhood of the third or fourth century A.D., W. J. Johnson assigns early fifth century A.D., or late date to him. K. B. Pathak speaks of 528 A.D. Prof. A. Chakravarti places his birth in about 52 B.C. Pandit Jugalkishor Mukhtar thinks he might have flourished from 81 to 165 A.D. M. A. Dhaky, a Shvetambara scholar, holds the view that dating of Kundakunda prior to the mid-eighth century A.D. was not justified. A. N. Upadhye, in his extensive introduction of *Pravachanasara*, has dealt with this subject in detail, and after examining the pros and cons of different views and arguments in that regard has located him in the beginning of the Christian era.

The bitter controversy in regard to Kundakunda's dates, sometimes amounting to bitterness between Digambara and Shvetambara Jain scholars, is indeed quite misplaced. What one should be concerned with, discuss and examine are the views expressed by him, the psychological insights and sublimest spiritual ideas, contained in his works, and the practical path of salvation, of peace, happiness and individual and social well-being described

by him in quite simple language. The following remarks of B. L. Atreya, uttered by him about *Yogarushishtha*, applies equally to Kundakunda's works especially *Samayasara* and *Niyamsara*.

Its [their] style and diction are very simple and the subject matter is very deep. It is so enchanting that the moment one starts reading it, one does not like to leave it until it is finished. It is indeed a pitcher filled with oceanic water, as an Indian proverb goes, it will serve many as a boat to cross over the river of births and deaths.¹⁵²

Replacement of Kundakunda by Pushpadanta

The unique position occupied by Acharya Kundakunda among the Jain authors, especially in the Digambara hierarchy, is quite evident by the mention of his name as having auspicious significance (*mangala*) and coming next only to Mahavira and his *Ganadhara* (apostle) Gautam (*mangalam bhagavan Viro, mangalam Gautamo gani, mangalam Kundakundadyah, Jain dharmostu mangalam* (Shvetambara Jains mention the name of Sthulbhadra in place of Kundakunda while reciting the above verse). It shows the reverence with which Kundakunda is remembered by all the sections of Digambara Jains till today without any demur, hesitation or doubt.

It is, indeed, quite unfortunate and a matter of deep regret that monks initiated by Acharya Pushpadanta Sagar, one among the dozens of existing present-day Digambara *acharyas*, have recently started reciting the above verse in which the name of Kundakunda is replaced by Pushpadanta.

What made them (the present-day *acharya* Pushpadanta and his monks) to initiate this practice and thereby creating a new controversy, which might lead to a new division, fissure or chasm among Digambara Jains, is best known to him or his initiated monk(s). However, one of his monks, Mum Saurabh Sagar, when asked about this change in Lucknow in 2002, is said to have stated that Kundakunda was *ekanta-vedi* (one espousing one-sided views) and that if they consider and accept their own venerable mentor

and teacher, the great influential *acharya* of this age, as having auspicious significance (*mangal-roop*), then what is wrong with that

These remarks makes it quite apparent that the main reasons for this novel initiative seems to be (1) failure to properly understand the three ethico-spiritual *nayas* (standpoints) of Kundakunda, (2) failure to properly understand the true sense or essence of his *vyavahara* and *nishchaya charitra*, (3) inability to compete or cope up effectively with a section of Jains who are giving a particular twist to Kundakunda's teachings, and (4) the realisation that, given the existing laxity in the conduct of householders as well as ascetics, it would be desirable for the ascetics to build safe residing or resting places (*mathas* or *ashrams*), which will cater to their specific needs and ensure even the modern facilities of mobile phone, cooler, etc without too much dependence on the goodwill of the householders

While the above-mentioned remarks by one of the initiated monks of Acharya Pushpadanta obviously referred to his own *guru* (teacher and mentor, present day Acharya Pushpadanta), but as the present writer of this book has heard Acharya Pushpadanta himself reciting *mangalam Pushpadantachyab*, i.e the name of Pushpadanta in place of Kundakunda, on one of the TV channels, it seems doubtful if he was reciting his own name. He probably referred to olden days Acharya Pushpadanta, who flourished in the first century of Christian era and co-authored, along with Bhutabali, one of the oldest (or the oldest according to Digambara Jains) Jain scripture entitled *Shatkhandagam*.

Even if the present-day Acharya Pushpadanta was referring to olden days Pushpadanta, it is worth considering how far it is desirable to change at this stage and for what reason the *mangal path* (above-mentioned recitation of auspicious significance), which we have been reciting for the last 2000 years. The stated reason for the change that Kundakunda was *ekantaradi* is totally wrong and not at all convincing. Moreover, Kundakunda occupies a unique place in the history of Jain religion, literature, ethics and philosophy, which cannot be filled by any other scholar or *Acharya*. It was because his works were found to be so insightful and spiritually satisfying that a Shvetambar monk of repute (Kanj

Svami), embraced the Digambara sect of the Jains alongwith several thousands of his disciples

The Jains, particularly Digambara Jains, including myself, have no doubt great respect for *Shatkhandagam* and, in fact, we celebrate the day on which this oldest of our scriptures was completed as "*shruta pandham*" (the day of reverence for scriptures when emphasis is laid on the study of scriptures) But it should not be forgotten that *Shatkhandagam* deals mainly with *Karmam yoga*, which discusses abstruse subjects such as cosmology (Universe), including description of hell and heaven along with detailed description of various kinds of Gōds, mathematical expressions of substances, space (regions, islands, oceans, etc and their distance measurements), time, qualities, etc, the doctrine of karma in its minutest detail, the soul classes (*Jiva Samasa*) with their detailed description of 14 kinds of sub-human souls, including one-sensed, fine and gross, developable and non-developable, 14 soul quests (*margana*), i.e conditions, forms and qualities etc by means of which or amongst which souls are searched for, such as conditions of existence (*gati*), senses, embodiment (*kaya*), vibratory activity (*yoga*), sex inclinations, etc

In *Nyāyāra*, Kundakunda has referred to some of them such as *Jiva Samasa* or soul classes (NS, 15-17) and *Margana* or soul quests (NS, 42) and has stated that their detailed account should be known from scriptures dealing with *Loka ubhaga* (division of universe), etc (NS, 17), as these are not of much relevance for the subject matter of his discussion

Self-reformation A difficult task

As the saying goes "there is no shortcut to success," it is not possible to proceed in the direction of peace, happiness and individual and social well-being in the real sense, unless we control our impulses, sensual pleasures and enjoyments, practise restraints on the activities of mind, body and speech, and observe the rules of moral conduct. And these steps can be lasting only when we undertake purification process of self-analysis and self-reformation through *pratikraman*, *pratyakhyan*, etc, (i.e repentance

of our past misdeeds, shortcomings, and unwholesome, negative thoughts and resolve not to repeat those mistakes in future), methods of self-discipline Science has provided all sorts of facilities, conveniences and material comforts and benefits and mankind has tried, over the years, various experiments of externally imposed solutions but it has not been possible to ensure peace and happiness of the individual and social well-being of the people

The logic of Kundakunda is simple One commits misdeeds, unwholesome and sinful activities, injury or harm to others (*para*) and condemnation or censure of others, etc because of one's careless, negligent and passionate attitude (*pramad yukta dhantra*), covetousness or keen desire for gratification of sensual pleasures, fulfillment of one's selfish ends without regard to others Such negative thinking and inauspicious thought activities or psychic dispositions (*ashubha parman*) radiate outwards in the society, in one's relations with others, they are the internal cause of sinful activities and unwholesome external behaviour or conduct

Kundakunda, therefore, has laid emphasis on *vyavahara dhantra* (moral conduct) and on rectifying our negative thinking and getting rid of our impurities of *abamkara* (I-ness, ego) and *mamatra* (attachment to worldly objects), passions, etc through constant practice of self-disciplinary methods of *pratikraman*, etc Unless righteousness becomes an integral part of one's intrinsic nature, the external acts of non-violence, goodwill, charity, etc are not sustainable in the long run The powerful forces of sensual attractions, desire and delusion forcefully and constantly drags the soul outside to objects of sensual pleasures and lead to involvement and attachment to external things Hence one should concentrate primarily upon destruction of the internal impurities of attachment, aversion, passions, etc , which are the root cause of all evils and problems

Kundakunda. An original thinker

Kundakunda was an original and revolutionary thinker His conscience revolted against the mechanical and ritualistic adherence

to external forms of religion Kundakunda was a true exponent of Mahavira's teachings. As Rabindranath Tagore points out, "Mahavira proclaimed in India the message of salvation, that religion is a reality and not a mere social convention. Salvation comes from taking refuge in the true religion and not from observing external ceremonies." Kundakunda laid stress on being ethical, to be ethical is to be fully human — not controlled by mere instincts or rituals. He was also not in favour of mere physical discomfort (*kaya-klesh*) and outward, hypocritical practices or mere verbal recitation of repentance, etc. *sutras* (aphorisms). The real penance or austerity (*tapas*) was not of body but of self-restraint and inner self-discipline of thoughts and emotions, control of attachment, aversion, passions, etc., which is reflected or manifested in the observance of the practices of non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, sex-fidelity and limitation of wants, desires and possessions.

Although a number of Jain *Adhyas* have written, discussed and analysed, in their own way, the attributes and characteristics of the soul and have advised and laid emphasis on the practice of righteousness but Kundakunda's works have their own unique place. In all of his works, Kundakunda has discussed the nature of the world and the question of the well-being of the soul (*atma kalyana*) from different viewpoints. Of his various works, *Niyamsara*, *Panchastikaya*, *Samayasara* and *Pravachanasara* are particularly famous and are very popular.¹⁵³ It would, indeed, be a sad day if the name of Kundakundacharya is besmirched in any way.

The great merit of Kundakunda is that whenever we attempt to assign greater priority or importance to other-referential external aspects of behaviour, he makes us look inwards, i.e. in the inner recesses or psychological and spiritual roots of our conduct. Although Kundakunda lays great emphasis on inner aspects, he does not lose sight of the external aspects altogether. Amrtachandra points out that the internal or inherent transformations in a person depend primarily or substantially on intrinsic power of the soul and internal self-discipline (*svamatta*), while other, external factors act as subsidiary or auxiliary

(*paramatta*) cause. In other words, transformations cannot occur purely due to the nature of the self, the external causes must be present as well.¹⁵⁴

The contribution of Kundakunda in the field of spiritualism is unsurpassable in the history of world religions and philosophy. His genius is reflected in the exposition of the soul and its functional mechanism in the pursuit of salvation or liberation — the highest objective of human endeavour. His prolific works form the most authoritative and valued source on the subject of soul in Jain metaphysics and spiritualism and indeed in the whole context of Indian philosophy. Even the monist "Shankara [circa 8th C.E.] was well acquainted with Kundakunda's [metaphysical exposition] either through the original or in the Sanskrit commentary [of] Amrtachandra."¹⁵⁵

Conclusion

In conclusion, it may be said that *vyavahara* and *nishchaya dhantra* of Kundakunda, as described in *Niyamsara* and discussed in depth in this introduction, can alone put Jain moral rules of conduct and spiritual self-discipline on the right track. In all his works, Kundakunda has rightly attached great importance to internal purity, dispassion, detachment and equanimity which alone can ensure durability to outward moral conduct. In *Pravachanasara* (*gatha*, 7), Kundakunda has stated "Conduct is *dharma*, *dharma* is defined as equanimity (*sama*), for equanimity is a state-of-evolution (*parinama*) of the soul, in which it is free from *moha* (infatuation, deluded view) and mental or emotional agitation (*kshobha*), caused primarily by the passions."

Kundakunda was neither an advocate of a religion, which is merely a set of habits, dogmas, forms, or empty rituals, i.e. "merely behavioral," nor the proponent of "merely experiential" type of mystic, who may be quite apathetic or completely unconcerned about right and wrong, or unaware of the psychological roots of morality and spirituality. Accordingly, Kundakunda has emphasised the utility and importance of external (*vyavahara*) moral conduct, consisting of observance of *vratas*, *samati* and *gupti*,

as these are not only natural, outward manifestations of internal purity (*nishchaya dharitra*) and help in assessing and validating subsidence of passions and purification (*nishuddhi*) of one's psychic dispositions or mental states but are also the means or the external, subsidiary (*nimitta*) causes of reducing passions.¹⁵⁶ Thus, both *vyaahara* and *nishchaya dharitra* (conduct), which together constitute *samyak-dharitra* (enlightened conduct), when preceded by or anchored upon enlightened vision and enlightened knowledge, are necessary for peace, happiness and social well-being and salvation

It is, indeed, a matter of deep regret that Kundakunda's advice, suggestions, prescriptions, rules or norms of conduct, are, for the most part, not being adhered to, in the real sense and in their true spirit, either by the traditional ritual prone (*kerry-kandi*) householders and ascetics or by the so-called *mumukshus*, who claim themselves as the staunchest and the most devout followers of the teachings of Kundakunda

Even though these so-called *mumukshus* (people desirous of *moksha*, i.e. salvation) are seen practising certain extreme forms of outward, external purity or *ahimsa*, such as not eating watermelon, etc. because of red colour and refusing to take meals if even an old co-religionist wearing woolen clothes in winter is noticed sitting next to him in the dining place, and indulging in ceremonial or ritualistic practices of *puga* (worship), *udhan*, etc., their contention that not only devotion and worship of Lord *Jina*, which can be *nimitta* for getting inspiration for emulating the qualities of the enlightened soul, but also compassion, helping the poor and the needy (*daya-dana*, i.e. kindness and charity) and *vrata* (vows), etc. rules of self-restraint and self-discipline are mere auspicious thought activities and not *dharma*,¹⁵⁷ is indeed, beyond one's comprehension. Their apathy, indifference, side-tracking, minimizing and even denial of the significance and importance of subsidence of passions (*prasham*), enthusiasm for righteousness (*samaga*), detached view (*nirveda*), compassion, etc. prerequisites (these are dubbed as mere external *lakshan*, i.e. characteristics) of enlightened view (*samyaktva* or *samyak-darshan*) and *vyaahara* and *nishchaya dharitra* (conduct), described in detail in *Nyamsara* and

considered by Kundakunda even as *tapas* (austerity), which is said to be the cause of both *samvara* (stoppage of fresh karmic bondage) and *munjara* (dissociation of already accumulated and existing karmas),¹⁵⁸ seems to be patently misplaced

How can anyone call himself a *dharmik* (truly religious person) in the absence of observance of ethical rules (*naṭiketa*) or basic rules of moral conduct, viz non-violence, truthfulness, non-stealing, sex-fidelity and limitation of one's wants and possessions Samantabhadra has categorically declared that "*na dharmo dharmikāḥ bina*," i.e. it is inconceivable to think of *dharmā* without a person observing moral rules of conduct The most comprehensive definition of *dharmā* in Jainism is provided in *Kartikēyavṛkṣeṣha* by Svami-Kumar It states "The intrinsic nature (*svabhāva*) of an object or living being is known as *dharmā*, forgiveness or forbearance, etc ten moral virtues [these are also dubbed by the so-called *mumukshus* as mere external virtues] is *dharmā*, three jewels comprising of enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct — the three combined is *dharmā*, and non-violence or protection of living beings from any injury or harm is *dharmā*"¹⁵⁹

According to these so-called *mumukshus*, the essence of *dharmā* or what they prefer to call *tattva dharmā*, is *atma jñāna*, i.e. to know about *atma* (soul), to recognize it, to be aware of it, to have faith in it and to remain established therein and that through knowledge it is always easy to attain self-realization¹⁶⁰ Devoid of enlightened view (*samyak-darśhan*), consisting of control of passions and compassion, etc prerequisites, and enlightened conduct (*samyak-dharma*), consisting of both *vyavahāra* and *nishchaya dharma*, this version of *dharmā* is nothing but dry knowledge (*śuśhukā-jñāna*) to use Shrimad Rajchandra's words¹⁶¹ "Todarmal has observed "*keval atma jñāna hi tai to moksha marg hoī nahin*,"¹⁶² i.e. mere knowledge of the soul alone does not make path of salvation Thus, without the practice of *vratā*, etc rules of moral conduct or self-restraint and *pratikraman* (repentance), etc self-disciplinary methods, it is not possible to purify the mind at the root level, not merely at the surface level, of its attachment, aversion, passions, etc impurities, and to remain established in the intrinsic purity of

the soul, i.e. to attain salvation

Instead of deviating from the teachings of Kundakunda, it is time to understand and put into practice the true principles or the essence of *dharma*, that he enunciated in his works, particularly *Niyamsara*. These principles have relevance for all the living beings of the world, irrespective of caste, colour, creed or adherence to any particular religion. These include that external conduct should be in alignment with inner purity of the psyche, that what matters most is the observance of non-violence etc. vows, carefulness and alertness in everything we do, self-restraint of mind, speech and body, positive contemplations or affirmations, and *pratikraman*, etc. methods of self-discipline and self-reliance, rather than laying emphasis on rituals, and prayers or incantations soliciting God's grace or depending on others, and that the way to peace, happiness and social well-being lies in abandoning covetousness and lust, becoming free from negativities and passions and giving up all hatred and ill-will.

NOTES

- 1 A N Upadhye arrives at this conclusion after detailed discussion in this regard. See A N Upadhye, *Sri Kundakundacharya's Pravachanasara* (Agas, 1984), Introduction, p. 21.
- 2 Ibid., Preface, p. 21.
- 3 B D Bhatt, "Vyavahara *nyaya* and Nisarga *nyaya* in Kundakunda's works," in *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenlandischen Gesellschaft* (ZDMG), Supplement 2, (Leipzig, 1974), p. 279.
- 4 M.B. Patil, Shedval, *Acharya Kundakunda*, translated by Yashpal Jain (Bangalore: Shri Digambara Jain Trust, 1990), pp. 43-48.
- 5 *Pravachanasara*, n. 1, Introduction, p. 40.
- 6 Ibid.
- 7 For Padmaprabha Maladhari-deva's commentary on *Niyamsara*, see Gyanmati, Aryika, *Niyamsara*, (Digambara Jain Trilok Sansthan, Hastinapur, Meerut, 1984), pp. 497-498 and 486.
- 8 According to Samantabhadra, renunciation of *bhogas* (food and other objects of the five senses, which can be enjoyed only once) and *upbhogas* (objects of senses, which can be enjoyed more than once) for a limited period of time is called *nyam*, while giving them up for life is called

- jaina. *Ratnakaranda Shmarukachara*, Verse 87 See also Damodar Shastri, "Nyamara. Ek Samukshan", in *Mahatma Jayanti Smarika*, 1986, Section 2, pp 6-13
- 9 Introductory verse of *Tattvartha Sutra*
 - 10 Rajamalla, *Panchadhyayi*, Verse 655
 - 11 Pandit Todarmal, *Moksha Marg Prakashak*, ed by Parmanand Jain Shastri, *Sasti Granthmala Karyalaya* (Delhi, 1950), p 374
 - 12 A Chakravarti, *Samayasara of Sri Kandelakunda* (Varanasi Bharatiya Jnanapith, 1971), p 184
 - 13 *Pravachanasara*, n 1, 95 (Book II 3)
 - 14 For detailed discussion of *anekara*, see Chapter 5 of Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', *Fundamentals of Jainism* (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2005)
 - 15 H.M Bhattacharya, "Essentials of Jaina Metaphysics and Epistemology," *Jain Journal*, January 1999, p 93
 - 16 Umasvami or Umasvati, *Tattvartha Sutra*, V 31
 - 17 Shiv Kumar Muni, *The Doctrine of Liberation in Indian Religion with Special Reference to Jainism* (New Delhi, 2000), p 65
 - 18 D K Goyal, *The Path to Enlightenment Suryambhu Stotra of Samantabhadra* (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2000), Verse 34
 - 19 See Foreword by Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak' in *ibid* , p xvi
 - 20 O.P Jain, *The Truth* (Roorkee, 1984), p 26
 - 21 Samantabhadra, *Apta Mumarsa*, Verse 59
 - 22 *The Truth*, n 20, p 24
 - 23 Nathmal Tata, *Studies in Jaina Philosophy* (Varanasi, 1951), pp 226-227
 - 24 Vividas (Ramnik V Shah), *Jainism*, Part II (Pondicherry, 1990), pp 90-91
 - 25 A Chakravarti, n 12, commentary on *gatha* 265, pp 164-165
 - 26 A N Upadhye, "Some Fundamental Aspects of Jainism", in *The Spirit of India*, presented to Smt. Indira Gandhi by Abhinandan Samiti (Bombay: Asia Publishing House, 1974), vol 2, section 1, p 62
 - 27 *Ibid*
 - 28 For detailed discussion of the doctrine of karma, see Chapter 10 of Jain, n 14
 - 29 *Apta Mumarsa* (AP), n 21, Verse 4
 - 30 Bhatt, n 3, p 288
 - 31 K C. Sogani, "Anekant: Metaphysico-Spiritual Perspective", Paper presented at the National Symposium on "Anekant: Theory and Practice" held in April 2001 at Bikaner, under the auspices of Jain Vishva Bharati, Ladnun

- 32 Bhatt, n 3, p 280
- 33 Ibid.
- 34 Tattva, n. 23, pp 226-227
- 35 See Jain, n. 14, p. 37
- 36 Chakravarti, n 12, pp 23-24
- 37 Haribhadra, *Ashtaka Prakarana*, translated by K.K Dixit (Ahmedabad L.D Institute of Technology, 1999), 32 5, p 106
- 38 Chakravarti, n 12, p 188
- 39 Ibid , p 24
- 40 Sogani, n 31, pp 7-8
- 41 John E Cort, ed , *Scripture and Community: Collected Essays on the Jains* by Kendall W Folkert (Atlanta, Georgia Scholars Press, 1993), p 114
- 42 *Tattvartha Sutra*, V 38
- 43 Chakravarti, n 12, p 15
- 44 Commentary or *Samayasara gatha* 7 by Chakravarti, n 12, pp 15-16
- 45 *Tattvartha Sutra*, VIII 9
- 46 *Pravachanasara, gatha* Book III 39, see Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', ed , *The Spectrum of Consciousness Pravachanasara of Kundakunda*, together with *Tattva dipika* (Illuminator of Truth) commentary by Amrtachandra Suri, English translation by Barend Faddegon (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2005)
- 47 *Apta Munirsa*, n 21, Verse 98
- 48 Ibid , Verses 96-100
- 49 *Pravachanasara, gatha* 217 / 1 (Book III 17), see n 46
- 50 Ibid
- 51 Ibid , *gatha* 218 (Book III 18)
- 52 Commentary of Amrtachandra on *Pravachanasara gatha* 149 (Book II 57), see *Pravachanasara*, n 46
- 53 Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', *The Art and Science of Self Realization Purushartha Siddhyupaya of Amrtachandra* (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2005), Verse 44
- 54 Ibid , Verses 112 and 113, commentary by K C. Sogani, *Ethical Doctrines in Jainism* (Sholapur, 1967), pp 85-86
- 55 Wayne Dyer, "Wisdom of Ages", *Economic Times* (New Delhi), 28 November 2003
- 56 *Purushartha Siddhyupaya*, n 53, Verse 42
- 57 *Apta Munirsa*, n 21, Verse 1
- 58 See *Jain Agam* (New Delhi Jain Mission), vol 2, nos 2-3, July-December 2002, pp 16-17

- 59 *The Path to Enlightenment. Suryambhu Stotra*, n 18, Foreword, p. xxvi
- 60 See Jain, n 14, Chapters 6, 7 and 8 on *Ahimsa*, *Apangraha* and Moral and Spiritual Discipline respectively
- 61 Svami Ramdeva, *Yoga Sadhana va Yoga Chikitsa Rahasya* (Kankhal, Haridwar Drvya Yoga Mandir Trust, 2003), p 11
- 62 Kundakunda, *Samayasara, gatha 4*
- 63 Jain, n 14 See Chapter 8 on Moral and Spiritual Discipline
- 64 Kailash Chandra Jain, *Jain Siddhanta* (New Delhi Bharatiya Jnanapith, 1983), p 43
- 65 Dean Ornish, *Eat More, Weigh Less* (New York. Harper Collins, Quill, 2001), pp 73-74
- 66 Quoted in Daniel Goleman, *Emotional Intelligence* (New York. Bantam Books, 1995), p 39
- 67 Cited in *ibid* , p 43
- 68 Harisatya Bhattacharya, *The Jaina Prayer* (Calcutta, 1964), pp 4-5
- 69 *Samayasara, gatha*, 298-299
- 69a For detailed discussion, see Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', ed , *The Enlightened Vision of the Self Svarupa Sambodhana of Bhatta Akalanka Deva* (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2005), Foreword
- 70 Chakravarti, n 12, Commentary on *gatha* 299, p 183
- 71 *Tattvartha Sutra*, Verse 38
- 72 Jain, n 14, see Chapter 5 on *Anekant*
- 73 Chakravarti, n 12, p 184
- 74 Jain, n 14, see Chapter 5 on *Anekant*
- 75 See Champat Rai Jain, *The Key of Knowledge* (Delhi, 1975), p 490
- 76 *Tattvartha Sutra*, VIII 2
- 77 C.R. Jain, *Ratna Karana Shrarukacharya* of Samantabhadra (Arrah, 1917), Introduction, p XLIV
- 78 Muni Nyayavijaya, *Jain Darshan*, as translated by Nagin J Shah, under the title *Jain Philosophy and Religion* (Delhi, 2000), p 121
- 79 *Tattvartha Sutra*, Commentary by Siddhasena Ganin, on *Supanna Bhashya* VII 16 (Bombay, 1930), p 91, as quoted in R. Williams, *Jaina Yoga* (Delhi, 1998), p 131
- 80 Quoted in Goleman, n 66, pp 47-48
- 81 See *Jain Agam* (bilingual quarterly) (New Delhi Jain Mission), July-December 2001, pp 16-17
- 82 Upadhye, n 1, Introduction, p 40
- 83 Bhatta Akalanka, *Tattvartha Rajavarttika*, 5 24 9, p 488, cited in Shriv Kumar Muni, n 17, p 61
- 84 Chakravarti, n 12, Introduction, p 97

- 85 Nathmal Tatia, "Jain Philosophy," in *Gurbachan Singh Talib*, ed., *Jainism* (Patiala Punjabi University, 1975), p 16
- 86 Hari Mohan Bhattacharya, "Jain Critique of the Sankhya and the Mimamsa Theories of the Self in relation to Knowledge," *The Jaina Antiquary* (Arrah), June 1939, pp 24-25
- 87 Amrtachandrasuri's *Laghutattvasphota*, ed by Padmanabh S Jaini (Ahmedabad L D Institute of Indology, 1978), Verses 337 and 596, pp 115 and 213
- 88 Upadhye, n 1, Introduction, p 76
- 89 *Pravachanasara*, n 46, *gatha* I 23
- 90 Mohan Lal Mehta, *Jain Philosophy, An Introduction* (Bangalore Bharatiya Vidya Bhawan, 1998), p 101
- 91 Upadhye, n 1, Introduction, p 70
- 92 H. Hiriyanna, quoted in Arvind Sharma, "Some Special Aspects of Jain Philosophy as a School of Indian Philosophy", *Sambodhi*, April 1980-January 1981, p 92
- 93 See Daniel C. Denner, *Freedom Evolves* (New York. Viking, 2003), pp 229-230 and 236
- 94 Nemichandra, *Brahmad Dvaya Sangrah* (Agas, 1989) commentary by Brahmadeva on *gatha* 4 and 44, pp 8 and 71-72
- 95 *Nyamsara*, n 7, pp 498 and 59
- 96 *Purnashartha Sudhyapaya*, n 53, Verse 8
- 97 Ibid, Verses 2 and 4
- 98 *Pravachanasara*, n 46, *gatha* I 6
- 99 Haribhadra, *Shodashaka Prakarana*, X 9 See also T G Kalghatgi, *The Jaina View of Life* (Sholapur, 1981), p 139
- 100 Gunadharacharya, *Kasaya Pahuda*, ed by Phoolchandra, Mahendra Kumar and Kailash Chandra (Mathura, 1974), vol I, p 5
- 101 K. Satchidananda Murty, *The Realm of Between. Lectures on the Philosophy of Religion* (Simla Indian Institute of Advanced Study, 1973), pp 51, 75 and 47-48
- 102 Eckhart Tolle, *The Power of Now. A Guide to Spiritual Enlightenment* (Novato, California New World Library, 1999), p 122
- 103 Ibid, p 75
- 104 Akalanika, *Asiba shati*, pp 179-181, quoted in Nagin J Shah, *Akalanika's Criticism of Dharmakirti's Philosophy* (Ahmedabad, 1967), p 69
- 105 *Apta Mimamsa*, n 21, Verse 25
- 106 *The Realm of Between*, n 101, p 75
- 107 Ibid, p 74
- 108 Ibid, p 76

- 109 Nathmal Tatia, in Gokul Chandra Jain, ed , *Satyasasan Pariksa of Acharya Vidyamandi* (Delhi, 1964), pp 39-40
- 110 Bhattacharya, n 15, p 93
- 111 *The Realm of Between*, n 101, p 76
- 112 Parmarthi Raina, "Sublimate *Ahamkara* Through Humility," *Times of India*, 14 October 2003
- 113 *The Realm of Between*, n 101, p 65
- 114 Ibid , p 75
- 115 *Apta Mimansa*, n 21, Verses 96 and 98
- 116 Ramsen, *Tattvarnushasan*, Verses 13-18
- 117 *The Realm of Between*, n 101, p 117
- 118 Albert Einstein, *Ideas and Opinions*, ed , by Carl Seeling (New York. Crown Publications, 1982), p 12
- 119 *Uttaradhyayan Sutra*, 20 37
- 120 Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', ed , *Paramatma Prakash of Yogendudev* (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2000), Book II, Verse 174
- 121 Quoted in *Suryamukhi Stotra*, n 18, Foreword, p XVII
- 122 A. Parthasarathi, *Srimad Bhagavad Gita* (Bombay, 1992), p 314
- 123 Ibid , p 315
- 124 *Gita*, Chapter VI, Verses 6-7
- 125 *Pravachanasara*, n 46, gatha 7
- 126 M.G Dhadphale, "Some Offshoots of the *Ahimsa* as Implied in Jain Philosophy", in R.C Dwivedi, ed , *Contribution of Jainism in Indian Culture* (Delhi, 1975), p 129
- 127 George Kotturan, *Ahimsa. Gautam to Gandhi* (New Delhi Sterling Publishers, 1973), p 73
- 128 Nicholas F Gier, "*Ahimsa*, the Self and Post Modernism Jain, Vedantist and Buddhist Perspectives," *International Philosophical Quarterly*, vol 35, no 1, Issue No 137, March 1995, p 82
- 129 Ibid.
- 130 Pannalal Jain, ed , *Samayasara of Kundakunda* (Agas, 1982), gatha 230
- 131 *Parishartha Siddhyapaya*, n 53, Verse 24
- 132 *Pravachanasara*, n 46, gatha 7, and gatha 6
- 133 Amar Singh Jain, "Path of *Moksa* according to Kundakunda," *Jainmargi* (Ontario, Canada), October 1998, p 22
- 134 Hastings Rashdall, *The Theory of Good and Evil*, vol I (London Oxford University Press, 1924), p 75
- 135 *Samayasara*, n 130, commentary or gatha 404, p 231
- 136 Kundakunda, *Panchastikaya*, gatha 106
- 137 Quoted in Kailash Chandra Jain, *Jain Dharma* (Chaurasi, Mathura,

- 1985), p 390
- 138 WJ Johnson, *Harmless Souls* (New Delhi Motilal Banarasidass, 1995), p 1
- 139 Ibid , p 27
- 140 Ibid , p 165
- 141 Paul Dundas, "The Laicisation of the Bondless Doctrine A New Study of the Development of Early Jainism, A Review of WJ Johnson, *Harmless Souls*," *Journal of Indian Philosophy*, vol 25, no 5, October 1997, p 502
- 142 *Harmless Souls*, n 138, p 223
- 143 Ibid , p 164
- 144 Ibid
- 145 Ibid , p 165
- 146 Ibid , p 223
- 147 Dundas, n 141, pp 502-503
- 148 Asher D Biemann, ed , *The Martin Buber Reader Essential Writings* (New York. Palgrave Macmillan, 2002), pp 170 and 172
- 149 Dundas, n 141, p 503
- 150 *Pravachanasara*, n 46, *gatha* 6
- 151 J.L Jaini, assisted by Brahmachari Sital Prasad, *Samayasara* by Shri Kundakundacharya (Lucknow, 1930), commentary on *Samayasara gatha* 431, pp 211-212
- 152 Quoted in Jagdish Prasad Jain 'Sadhak', ed , *Spiritual Insights Ishtopadesh and Samadhi Shatak* by Acharya Pujyapada Swami (New Delhi Radiant Publishers, 2000), Introduction, p 10
- 153 Dr Hiralal Jain's unpublished incomplete article "Shree Kundakundacharya" in Hindi Translation mine
- 154 *Lagneatrusphota*, n 87, Verse 391, p 133
- 155 Chakravarti, n 12, Introduction, p 105 See also Amar Singh Jain, n 133, p 22
- 156 *Moksha-Marg Prakashak*, n 11, p 427
- 157 Kanji Svami's Lectures, *Jnana-svabhava aur Jnana svabhava*, compiled by Harilal Jain, translated in Hindi by Maganlal Jain (Jaipur, 1988), p 175
- 158 *Tattvartha Sutra*, IX.3, *Tapasa nirjara cha*
- 159 Svami-Kumar, *Kartikeyanupreksha*, *gatha* 478
- 160 Hukam Chand Bhanil's lecture on *Ahimsa* Television, 10 December 2003
- 161 Shrimad Rajchandra, *Atma siddhi*, verse 3
- 162 Todarmal, n 11, p 296

Summary and Remarks on Niyamsara

A N Upadhye

It contains 187 *gāthas* according to the text preserved in the Sanskrit commentary of Padmaprabha Maladharideva. The author has composed, following the words of *Jñā*, this work as an excuse for self-meditation. His aim is to give some essential discussion on Three jewels which necessarily (*nyamena*) form the path of liberation (2-4). Right faith [Enlightened Vision] consists in believing in *apara*, *agam* and *tattva*, after the description of the first two (5-8) follows the detailed discussion about the *tattva* or principles of Jainism. *Jñā* is described with regard to its two *upayogas* and its natural and abnormal modifications (10-19), then further are discussed non-sentient principles, namely, matter, *dharma*, *adharma*, *akasha* and *kala*, with *Jñā* they are called six substances, and the same are known as *astikaya*, when time or *kala* is excepted (20-37). It is the duty of the soul to relinquish the objects external and pursue its own nature, since every soul, from the point of view of initial [intrinsic] purity, is a *Siddha* itself (38-51). This Right faith [Enlightened Vision] is devoid of perverted motives.

Right [Enlightened] knowledge is free from doubt, perversity or

delusion and vacillation, and it consists in the correct understanding as to what is acceptable and what is rejectable (51-52)

Right [Enlightened] conduct, from the *vyavahāra* point of view, consists in observing five *vrātas*, five *samāntas* and three *gūptas*, all of which are precisely defined (56-68), this topic is concluded with some remarks from the *nishchaya* point of view (69-70) and with the description of five dignitaries, viz. *arhat*, *siddha*, *acharya*, *upadhyaya* and *sadhu* (71-75). Then, in order to confirm the aspirant in his *bhed abhyāsa* or *bhedā upāna* (77-82), a discussion about Right conduct from *nishchaya* *naya* is set forth mainly describing the *avushyakas* (with their attendant reflections) such as *pratikraman* (83-94), *pratyakhyan* (95-106), *alochana* of four kinds (107-112), *kayasarga* (119-123) (these two being the forms of *prayashchitta* 113-118), *namayuka* (124-133) and *parama-bhakti* which is two-fold *nerurti* and *yoga bhakti* (134-140). An exposition on *avushyaka*, which is defined as *avusassa kamma avusyam*, is given from the [*nishchaya*] point of view. These rites like *pratikraman*, etc. lead [an aspirant] to *utanaga dhantra*, passionless conduct, these are verbal rites, and one should exert one's utmost to convert them into meditational ones, the practice of *avushyakas* leads to self-realization (141-158) attended with omniscience wherein *darshan* and *jñāna* are simultaneous, just as light and heat are simultaneous in the Sun.¹ Omniscience is not merely self-illuminating, but it illuminates, at the same time, other objects as well, in fact it is the essential nature of the soul. The various activities of an omniscient do not involve any further karmic bondage, at the termination of his age, with all the karmas tracelessly destroyed, the liberated soul shoots up to the top of the world (*loka*), where he halts eternally because of the absence of any cause for movement, and enjoys unparalleled eternal happiness (159-183).

Critical remarks on *Niyamsara*

That Kundakunda is the author of *Niyamsara* is accepted on the authority of Padmaprabha, the only known commentator of that work. The discussion of subject matter is quite worthy of Kundakunda, and the whole atmosphere is quite in tune with other works of his. The exposition of the subject matter is very systematic,

leaving aside some traditional verses here and there, as it would be clear from analysis. For the division of the text into 12 *śrutaskandhas*, Padmaprabhadeva, the commentator, is responsible, with all due deference to his high-flowing spiritual muse I must say that this division has no sanction from the original text, nor does it facilitate the understanding of the text in any way; the author, it appears, never intended to have any divisions in his work. The composite character of the text, when read in the original, immediately impresses a reader; and in this respect it stands in contrast to *Bhāṣapāhuda*. This work contains some traditional *gāthas* which are found in his other works, and also in *Mulachara*. So far as I understand the discussion, Kundakunda's enumeration of *avśhyakas* is thus *pratīkraman*, *pratīkhyān*, *alochana*, *kāyotsarga*, *samāyuka* and *parambhakti*; it is slightly different from the traditional enumeration (*Mulachara* 1, 22), wherein *alochana* is absent, being possibly included in *pratīkraman* which it precedes in actual performance (*Mulachara* VII, 121 ff), and in place of *parambhakti* we have *stuti* and *vandana*. Kundakunda divides *parambhakti* into two types *nirvṛtti* and *yoga bhakti*, wherein can be the traces of *stuti* and *vandana*. Either Kundakunda did not want to stick to the traditional enumeration because he was discussing the subject from *nishchaya naya*, or he did not find any material difference between the two enumerations, or he incorporates, in this context, some early tradition. The phrase *loka-ubhaya* in *gātha* 17 does not refer, as I understand it, to any individual text but to a class of literature of *Lokanayoga* group, while in *gātha* 94 the author decidedly refers to a text *Pratīkramanasūtra* by name (*Padikamāna nāmadhēye sūtre yaha unṛadām padikamānam*, etc.)

REFERENCES

- 1 Simultaneity of *jñāna* and *darśan* in an omniscient is upheld here, Siddhasena, too, in his *Sāramatīkā* II, 3ff, accepts this very position, while Jinabhadra-*kṣāmasāma* (*Visheshavśhyakabhāṣya*, 3132 ff) and a host of other Shvetāmbara authors, following their Canon, especially *Nandi*, *Pragāparā* and other texts, say that *jñāna* and *darśan* in a *Kevalin* are *kṛmāna*, step by step, and not *yugapat* or simultaneously

Niyamsara: Text and Commentary

Chapter I Self (*Jiva*)

1 Bowing to *Vira Jina*, who, by nature is the possessor of infinite and supreme knowledge and intuition, I compose *Niyamsara*, as preached by *Kevalis* and the *Shruta Kevalis*

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

In this *gatha*, Shri Kundakunda Acharya, who lived in the first century of the Christian Era, renders homage to Lord Mahavira, also called *Vira*, the last of the twenty-four *Tirthankaras*, and enshrines his attributes in his heart for the purification of his thoughts, so that he may be able to fulfill his undertaking successfully. Further, the Acharya expresses it emphatically that whatever he is writing is not his own independent teaching, but is fully based upon the authoritative pronouncement of *Kevalis* and *Shruta Kevalis*.

Kevalis are Omniscient Supreme Souls, who occupy a highly refined physical body, but are free from the four *ghatya karmas* (destructive of the nature of the self), and whose immaculate (*keval*) knowledge of one's own true nature is

independent of senses, and comprehends the essence of the intrinsic and essential nature of the self (NS, 159) *Shruta-Ketulis* are those Worthy Souls who have obtained immaculate knowledge of all the Scriptures

2 In Jain Scriptures, it is declared that the Path or the way and the Fruit (i.e. the result, outcome or consequence) of the Path are two constituent parts. The means of liberation constitutes the Path, and liberation is its Fruit

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

The Path of Liberation is the combination of enlightened world-view, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct—the three jewels of Jainism. Following this path a soul reaches its ultimate goal, *nirvana* (salvation). *Nirvana* is the condition of the soul wherein it is free from all karmic dirt and regains its own pure inherent nature. It is, then, all-blissful, all-knowing, all-powerful, everlasting, having accomplished all that was to be accomplished.

3 What is in reality worth doing (is) *nyam*, and this *nyam* is intuition or world-view, knowledge, and conduct. In order to avoid perversion or distortion [of its true meaning or real sense], the suffix *sara* has been particularly affixed to it.

COMMENTARY

Enlightened intuition, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct together constitute the path of liberation. This is the natural law for the purification of soul and is called *nyam*. The word *sara*, suffixed to the word "*nyam*", emphasises its purity and immaculateness. The name of the book *Nyamsara* is thus literally true.

4 *Nyam* (is) the path of liberation, its fruit is supreme *nirvana*. And each of the three [constituent parts of liberation] is individually described.

5 Firm conviction (*shraddha*) in the Supreme Souls, the

Scriptures and the true nature of the substances or fundamental principles (*tattvas*) is *samjuktas* [Enlightened Intuitive Vision or World-view] He who is free from all defects, blemishes or faults and is possessed of all essential attributes of the intrinsic nature of soul is the trustworthy, adorable Lord (*Apta*)

COMMENTARY

One should rely only on those scriptures, which are based upon the preachings of a *Apta*, who is free from all blemishes and passions. Other scriptures written by one, who has likes and dislikes, one who can reward or punish, and has limitations, is necessarily imperfect and cannot be the source of true knowledge.

6-7 One, who is free from the defects of hunger, thirst, fear, anger, attachment, delusion, anxiety, old age, disease, death, perspiration, grief, pride, indulgence, surprise, sleep, birth, and mental agitation or restlessness, and is in possession of sublime grandeur of immaculate knowledge is called *paramatma* (the supreme soul), One who is not such, (is) not *paramatma*.

8 Words emanating from His mouth, which are free from the flaw of inconsistency and are immaculate, are called *agam* (scripture). That *agam* enables us to ascertain the true nature of the substances as they really are (*tattvarthas*).

9 Self (*jiiva*), matter (*pudgala*), *dharma*, *adharma*, time and space [having dimension] are said to be *Tattvarthas*. These *tattvarthas* are endowed with various attributes and modifications.

10 Self is characterised by *upayoga*. *Upayoga* is two-fold: *darshan upayoga* (intuitive awareness) and *jñana* (knowledge). *upayoga jñana* is of two kinds, *svabhava* (intrinsic, natural) *jñana* and *ubhava* (non-natural) *jñana*.

COMMENTARY

The term "*upayoga*" has been variously translated in English as psychic-attention or exertion, conscious-attentiveness or attention, function, manifestation or use of consciousness.

11 Knowledge, which is immaculate and independent of the senses and does not require any assistance from anyone, is considered *svabhava jnana*. *Vibhava jnana* is of two kinds: right or enlightened knowledge and wrong or deluded knowledge.

12 Right or enlightened knowledge is of four kinds: (a) knowledge derived by means of the senses and the mind (*mati jnana*), (b) scriptural-knowledge (*shruta-jnana*), i.e. knowledge derived from the reading or hearing of Scriptures, (c) direct knowledge of matter (*avudhi jnana*), and (d) direct knowledge of person's mental activity (*manah-paryaya jnana*). Wrong or deluded knowledge is of three kinds, beginning with *mati jnana*.

13 Similarly, *darshan upayoga* (is) of two kinds (i.e.) natural (*svabhava darshan*), and its opposite, non-natural (*vibhava darshan*). That, which is immaculate, independent of the senses and devoid of any assistance is called natural *darshan upayoga*.

COMMENTARY

Knowledge preceded with enlightened view or Intuition is called enlightened knowledge. Knowledge combined with deluded view is termed wrong or deluded knowledge.

14 Non-natural *darshan* is said to be of three kinds: ocular (*chakshu darshan*), i.e. indefinite apprehension with the eyes, non-ocular (*achakshu darshan*), i.e. indefinite apprehension with the senses other than the eyes, and *avudhi darshan*, i.e. direct apprehension of material substances without the assistance of the senses and mind.

Modification (*paryaya*) [of substances] (is) of two kinds: one having *sua para apeksa*, i.e. related to or associated with other substance, and the other *nipeksha* (non-relational), i.e. in which there is no involvement or association (*apeksa*) of other substance.

15 Physical modifications in the form of human, hellish, sub-human and celestial beings are said to be *vibhava paryaya*, i.e. non-natural states [i.e. impure states of the self or *jiva*, resulting from *karma upadhi*]. The condition or state of consciousness, which is free from *karma upadhi*, i.e. association or involvement of *karmas*, both *dravya karma* (physical, material karmas) and *bhava karmas* (mental states or psychic karma), is considered *svabhava paryaya*.

(natural state)

16-17 Human beings are of two kinds, born in Work-region and those born in Enjoyment-region. Hellish beings should be known to be of seven kinds, because of different regions

Sub-human beings are said to be of fourteen kinds, while celestial beings (are) of four kinds Their detailed account or explanation should be known from (the scripture) *Loka Vibhaga*

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

Human beings are of two kinds (a) Those born in Work-Region have to work to earn their livelihood by following different vocations, such as military, literary, agricultural and commercial etc , and (b) Those born in Enjoyment-Region live in a condition of life where there is all enjoyment, without any work or effort

Sub-human Beings Excepting the human, the hellish and the celestial beings, all others from the one-sensed to the five-sensed living beings are called sub-human souls or *tiryancha* These are called *tiryancha*, from the word "*tiryak*", crooked, because the crooked human beings are said to be born as sub-human beings in their next birth They are in a very low position as regards their body, enjoyment, etc , have little knowledge, and have many infamous grave shortcomings The fourteen kinds of sub-human beings referred to in *gatha* 17 are as follows (1) one-sensed (gross beings having sensation of touch only, i.e. macroscopic, (2) one-sensed fine beings, i.e. microscopic, (3) two-sensed beings, (4) three-sensed beings, (5) four-sensed beings, (6) five-sensed without mental faculty; and (7) five-sensed beings with mental faculty Each of the above can be divided into those capable of full development (*pariyapta*) and those not so capable or *apariyapta*, thus totaling 14 types of *tiryancha* *Tiryancha* is a common name covering both plant and animal kingdoms

18 From *vyavahara naya* (external, *para ashrita*, i.e. other-referential or other-oriented viewpoint), the soul [empirical self] is the *karta* (doer) and *bhokta* (enjoyer and experienter) of *pudgala* (material) karmas From *nashchaya naya* (internal, *sui ashrita*, i.e. self-

referential but conditioned by *para* (other), i.e. material karman), the soul is the *karta* and *bhokta* of its attachment, passions, etc. mental states or psychic dispositions (*bhavas*), arising out of the Self's association with material karman

19 From the *dravyarthika* (intrinsic nature of substance) point of view, the self is different from the aforesaid modifications (*paryayas*, both physical and psychic), but from the *paryayarthika* (modification) point of view, the self is *sanyukta* (joined, united or connected) with them. Thus, one should know from these two viewpoints

Chapter II Non-Self (*Ajiva*)

20 *Pudgala* (material substance) is of two kinds in the form of an *anu* (atom) and in the form of molecules (*skandha*). The molecules are of six kinds and *paramanu* (the subtlest, finest and the minutest atom) (is) of two kinds

COMMENTARY

In the first line of *gatha*, the word "*anu*" is used, while in the second line, the word "*paramanu*" is used, which is said to be of two kinds. It appears that the subtle particles are sought to be described at atomic and sub-atomic levels.

21-24 Gross-gross, gross, gross-fine, fine-gross, fine, and extremely fine are the six kinds of earth, etc., *skandha*.

Solids like earth, stone, etc. consist of gross-gross molecules, liquids like ghee, water, oil, etc. are known as gross, shade, sunshine, etc., are to be known as gross-fine molecules.

Objects of the four senses [of touch, taste, smell and hearing] are described as fine-gross molecules. The molecules, which have the capacity of being subtle, karmic matter, are fine molecules. Those which are unlike these are described as extremely fine molecules.

25 That which is the cause of the four inorganics [earth, water, fire and air] should be known as causal-subtlest atom (*karana*)

paramanu) The smallest possible part of a molecule should be known as effect of those subtlest atom (*karya paramanu*).

26. That, subtlest particle of matter, which in itself is its own beginning, its own middle and its own end [i.e. which evolves in its own intrinsic nature], is inaccessible to the senses, and (is) indivisible, should be known as *paramanu*

COMMENTARY

The material substance or matter is called *padgala*, because it combines "*pooryati*" and forms into molecules and "*galati*" dissociates into subtle atoms, and the most fundamental or the finest sub-atomic particles of matter (*paramanus*)

27 That [*paramanu*], which possesses one taste, one colour, and one smell, and two touches [one of hot or cold and one of smooth or rough], is said to have natural attributes Those tangible to all (senses) are said to have non-natural attributes in Jain scriptures

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

Jainism recognises five fundamental tastes and five basic colours, two types odour and eight types of touch perception These five tastes are — pungent, bitter, astringent, sweet, sour Five colours are — white, yellow, green, red and black. Smell is good or bad Touches are eight— hard, soft, heavy, light, cold, hot, positive charge [smooth] and negative charge [rough] The modern understanding of taste is in terms of flavours — the colour-codes corresponding to modern system of colour-filters Two types of odours have been broadly divided into acceptable and non-acceptable The classification of "touch" stems from thermal, electrical, gravitational and magnetic properties Thus, the Jaina concept needs a proper understanding in the modern scientific context

28 The modification, which is independent of any relational aspect with other objects, is called natural modification (*svabhava pariyaya*), and modifications in the forms of molecules are non-

natural modifications (*ubhaya paryaya*)

29 From *nishchaya* point of view, *paramanu* is said to be "matter substance", but from the other (i.e. *vyaavahara* point of view), molecule is called "Matter substance"

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

From the *nishchaya* viewpoint, an indivisible and the subtlest possible particle of matter, i.e. *paramanu*, is the real "matter substance". Its attributes are the natural attributes of matter. Such a *paramanu* must have five attributes: (1) any one of the five colours, (2) any one of the two smells, (3) any one of the five flavours, (4) any one of the two touches, i.e. roughness and smoothness [positive or negative charge], (5) any one of the two touches, i.e. coldness and heat [probably magnetic].

So long as *paramanu* is not mixed or joined with other substance and the modification of *paramanu* is independent of all other objects it is called natural modification.

When two or more *paramanu* combine together to form a "molecule", it is said to be "matter" substance from *vyaavahara* point of view. Attributes and modifications of molecules so formed are known as non-natural attributes and modifications.

30 *Dharma* acts as the auxiliary cause in the movement of soul and matter, while *adharma* acts in their remaining at standstill. Space is the auxiliary cause in giving space to all the substances, including *jiva* (self).

31 Time, from *vyaavahara* viewpoint, is said to be of two kinds, instant (*samaya*) and wink (*avali*), and also of three kinds (past, present and future). Past (time is) equal to the number of bodily forms [exhausted by the liberated souls in their mundane existence] multiplied by innumerable winks.

32 The instants, mentioned above, are infinite times (of the number of) *Jivas* and of material particles. *Kala aru* (the smallest points of time), with which the universe is packed in full, are (called) *paramartha kala* (Real Time).

33 "Time" is the cause of modifications in *jiva*, etc substances. The four substances (i.e. *dharma*, *adharma*, the space and time), have (only) their own natural attributes and modifications.

34 Excepting Time, (the other five) substances are said to be *astikaya*, i.e. having extension in space, it is so mentioned in Jain scriptures. Since they occupy numerous space points, or spatial units, they are definitely said to have *kaya*, i.e. form.

35-36 The material particles [atomic and sub-atomic] of matter are numerable, innumerable and infinite. Verily, there are innumerable space points in *dharma*, *adharma* and in each individual *jiva*.

The same (innumerable number of spatial units are) in the universe, and in the other, i.e. (beyond-universe) (there are) infinite (number of spatial units). Time has no extension in space, therefore, it has only one space point.

COMMENTARY

Space is that which gives room to all substances, including *jiva* and Matter. Time is the auxiliary cause of bringing about modifications, in all substances, including *jiva* and Matter.

Spatial unit is that part of space which is occupied by the smallest indivisible particle (*paramanu*) of matter. All the five substances, except Time, have extension in space and occupy more than one space point or spatial unit. They are, therefore, called *panch astikayas*, i.e. substances having extension in space. Time does not have extension in space. The material *paramanus* possess the capacity of compressing an infinite number of themselves into one molecule, which may not occupy more than one spatial unit.

37 The Matter substance (is) material, all the rest are immaterial. The essential characteristic of *jiva* (self) is consciousness, all others are devoid of the attribute of consciousness.

Chapter III

Pure Thoughts or Contemplations (*śuddha bhava*)

38 The embodied, empirical self (*jīva*) and all other external *tattvas* are *bhya* (not to be desired or aspired for) For the self, the only thing to be aspired for is to realise the intrinsic nature of its own true self, which is free from the modifications, and attributes, caused by or related to *karma-upādhi*, i.e. association or involvement of karmas

39 Surely, the intrinsic nature of the self is devoid of stages of purity or impurity such as the psychic dispositions or mental states of honour (respect) or dishonour, pleasure or pain

40 The essential nature of the self is free from all the four aspects of karmic *upādhi*, viz. duration (*sīdhi*), quantity or mass of material particles assimilated (*pradesha*), nature, quality or class of karma that is bound (*prakṛti*), and the degree of intensity (*anubhaga*) Such intrinsic nature of the self is also free from experiencing the fruit or result of *karma*, arising out of its coming into operation

41 (The intrinsic nature of the self) is devoid of psychic, emotional state (*bhāvas*) of dissociation of thought-activities (*kṣayika bhāva*), of dissociation-cum- subsidence of thought-activities (*kṣayopashamika bhāva*), of the thought activities arising out of the operation of karmas (*audāyika bhāva*), and of the thought activities, resulting from the subsidence or karmas (*aupashamika bhāva*)

42 The essential nature of the self is free from the wanderings in the four situations or conditions of life (*gati*), and from birth, old age, death, disease, sorrow, the stages of genome or family (*kula*), nuclei (*yonī*), soul-classes (*Jīva Samasa*) and soul quests (*Mārga*)

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

The 14 soul-classes (*jīva samasa*), into which the mundane souls are divided, are (1) One-sensed (i.e. having sensation of touch only gross beings, i.e. macroscopic), (2) one-sensed fine beings, i.e. microscopic, (3) two-sensed beings, (4) three

-sensed beings, (5) four-sensed beings; (6) five-sensed irrational beings, (7) five-sensed rational beings Each of these may be *pariyapta* (capable of full development) or *apariyapta*, i.e. not so capable Thus, there are 14 soul-classes

There are also 14 soul-quests (*margana*) These are those special conditions, forms or characteristics by means of which the mundane souls are sought, distinguished and investigated These are 1 condition of existence (*gati*), 2 senses (*indriya*), 3 embodiment (*kaya*), 4 vibratory activities (*yoga*), i.e. the activities of mind, body and speech, 5 sex inclinations (*veda*), 6 passions (*kashaya*), 7 knowledge (*jnana*), 8 control (*samyam*), 9 intuition (*darshan*), 10 thought-paint (*leshya*), 11 capability of liberation (*bhavyatva*), 12 enlightened vision (*samyaktva*), 13 rationality (*samyatva*), 14 assimilation (*aharaka*)

43 The soul is devoid of any turmoil or harmful effects, arising from the activities of mind, body and speech resulting from the material karma and psychic karma, free from contradictory traits of praise and condemnation, joy and sorrow, etc., devoid of *namatva* (sense of mineness, proprietary interest or affection for persons or things), without body, not dependent on anyone, free from attachment, shortcomings or blemishes, delusion, and fear

44 The soul is devoid of all *granthi* (bondage of attachment), both internal (passions, desire for sexual enjoyment, sorrow, fear, disgust, etc.) and external material possessions, and is free from attachment (*raga*), *shalya* (that which keeps our mind always agitated), all the blemishes, desires, anger, pride and lust

45 Colour, taste, smell, touch, genders of female, male, and common-sex inclinations, etc., (six kinds of bodily) figures, (and six kinds of) physical constitution or skeletons, all these are not found in the soul.

46 Know that the soul is devoid of colour, taste, and smell, not cognizable (by the senses), possessed of the essential characteristic of consciousness, soundless, incomprehensible by any outward sign and one having no describable form.

47 Just as liberated souls (are) free from oldness, death and

birth, and are endowed with the eight attributes, so (are) mundane souls [from *shuddha*, i.e. pure point of view]

48 Just as liberated souls, residing at the highest stage in the universe, are bodiless, indestructible, independent of senses, free from (karmic) filth, and pure, so the mundane souls (also) should be considered (from *shuddha* viewpoint)

49 All the empirical souls have been described as possessing all the aforesaid *bhavas* (psychic dispositions, mental states or conditions) from *vyavahara* (external, other-oriented) viewpoint, but from *shuddha* point of view, they also (are) of the same [intrinsic] nature as liberated souls

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

Mundane selves are those selves which are associated with *karma upadhi*. It is on account of that they exist in the universe, in different conditions of life, and experience innumerable kinds of pain and pleasure. These selves are so avaricious, that their worldly wants are never satisfied. Whatever pleasures they enjoy are sensual, so they cannot satisfy their desires. It is a matter of daily experience that the more the desires of a mundane self are satisfied, the more they are multiplied in every direction. On one side these souls experience the fruits of their past karmas, which shed off after fruition, on the other side, at the same time, they bind fresh wholesome or unwholesome *karmas*, on account of their multifarious impure thought-activities. This process has been going on since eternity and will go on as long as the self does not realise its intrinsic purity and does not adopt proper measures to tread the path of liberation. It is due to these simultaneous operations of fruition and bondage, that souls transmigrate from one condition of life to the other.

50 All the aforesaid *bhavas* of the empirical self are the mental states of attachment, passions, etc., arising out of association or involvement of *para dharma* (other, or foreign substance, i.e. karmic matter) and *para sahaiva* (different from the intrinsic nature of self), hence they are *heya* (to be renounced or discarded). Only

the *antar tachcham* or *antias tattvam* in Sanskrit, i.e. the intrinsic, essential nature of soul (*appa*), which is one's own true self (*sagadarsam* or *svaka dravya*), is *upadeya* (to be realized)

51 Conviction (in things ascertained as they are) alone without (any) indiscriminate clinging to a wrong or perverse view due to attachment, passions, etc. (is) enlightened view (*samyak darshan*) (Knowledge) free from doubt (*sarshaya*), perversity or delusion (*umoha*) and vacillation (*ubhrama*) is enlightened knowledge (*samyak jnana*)

52 Conviction free from wavering (*dala*), impurity (*mal*), and non-steadfastness (*agadha*) alone (is) enlightened view. Correct understanding (*adbgama*) of principles (*tattvas*), what are worth renouncing and worth realising, (is) enlightened knowledge

53 The external, auxiliary or subsidiary causes of enlightened view are the Jain scriptures and the persons who know them, while the destruction, etc. of view-deluding karma is said to be the internal causes

54 Listen, (just as) enlightened view and enlightened knowledge are the (causes of) salvation, (so) is enlightened conduct. Therefore, I shall describe enlightened conduct from (both) *vyavahara* and *nishchaya* points of view

55 Enlightened conduct from the *vyavahara* point of view is said to be austerities from the *vyavahara* viewpoint, while enlightened conduct from *nishchaya* viewpoint is definitely the observance of austerities from that viewpoint

Chapter IV Vyavahara Charitra

56 Psychic disposition or thought activity free from (all) undertakings (injurious to any of) the mundane souls (which are) known to be existing in (any of the various) family, nuclei, soul-classes, soul-quests, etc., is the first vow of *ahimsa* (non-injury)

57 He, who renounces psychic disposition or thought activity leading to telling falsehood, on account of delusion, attachment or aversion is (said) to observe always the second vow of *satya* (truth)

58. He, who renounces the psychic disposition or thought activity of picking up articles belonging to another, lying in a village, a town or a forest, (is said) to observe the third vow of (non-stealing) *acharya*

59 He, who having seen a woman or her picture, is not moved by a desire for her, or whose psychic disposition or thought activity is free from sexual instinct (*maithuna sangna*), (is said to observe) the fourth vow of (sex-fidelity) *brahmacharya*

60 He, who is endowed with enlightened conduct in abundance, renounces all attachment or longing [both internal and external], for wordly objects, without having any expectation of any kind from them, is said to observe the fifth vow of renunciation of acquisitiveness or limitation of wants and possessions (*parigraha tyaga*)

61 He, who walks upon a trodden path, free from living beings, in day time, after seeing (carefully) a distance of his arms length (two yards) ahead, (is said) to observe carefulness in walking (*vyu samati*)

62 He, who having renounced backbiting, ridiculing, talking ill of others, self-praise and harsh words, speaks what is beneficial for himself as well as for others (is said) to observe carefulness in speech (*bhasha samati*)

63 He, who takes food with calmness and equanimity, which is wholesome, free from living-beings, and given by others [with a feeling of joy, humility and enthusiasm], and which neither he himself has prepared, nor made others prepare it for him, nor it was prepared with his approval according to his liking, is said to observe carefulness in eating (*eshana samati*)

64 He, who consciously takes precaton in picking up, and putting down books and jug (*kamandala*), etc , is said to observe carefulness in lifting and laying down things (*adana nakshepana samati*)

65 He, who is careful in disposing excrements, stools, urine, etc in proper place and in such manner as would cause no harm to other living beings, and where there is no obstruction on behalf of anybody, (is said) to observe carefulness in disposing excrements (*pratishtthapana samati*)

66 Avoiding of sinful or defiled, infatuation, instinct behaviour, feelings of attachment and aversion, etc unwholesome thought-activities, is called self-restraint of mind (*mano-gupti*) from *vyaśāhara nāya*

67 Avoiding of unnecessary gossip indulged in by people relating to women, state/politics, theft, food, etc , which are the cause of sin, or refraining from falsehood, etc (is called) self-restraint of speech (*vachana-gupti*)

68 Renunciation of physical acts, such as binding, piercing, beating, contracting, expanding, etc [of living beings] is called self-restraint of body (*kāya-gupti*)

69 And know that keeping mind free from attachment, etc is self-restraint of mind Abstaining from falsehood, etc , or keeping silence is self-restraint of speech

70 Relinquishment of attachment to the body (*kāyotsarg*) by way of refraining or abstaining from activities of the body, as also abstaining from harm or injury, etc , is called self-restraint of body

71 Worthy of worship (*arhats*) are those who are entirely free from all the (four) destructive karmas, and are endowed with the highest qualities, of immaculate knowledge, etc , and have thirty-four extraordinary attributes (*atishāyas*)

72 Those, who have destroyed the bondage of the eight kinds of Karmas, are possessed of the eight great attributes, occupy the highest position in the universe and are the most exalted and indestructible, are liberated souls (*siddhas*)

73 Those, who efficiently practise five kinds of conduct [those relating to enlightened vision, knowledge, conduct, austerities and development of inner spiritual strength], who have conquered the attractions of the five senses, which is considered to be as difficult task as trampling down the fury of the elephant, who are firm in their determination, and who are steadfast in virtues, are (called) *acharya*

74 Those, who are bold and brave, endowed with the three jewels [of enlightened vision, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct], teach the principles enunciated by the Conqueror (*Jina*), and consistently practise an attitude of

desirelessness, are (known) as the Preceptors (*upadhyaya*)

75 Those, who are free from all (worldly) engagements, are always deeply absorbed in four kinds of contemplations (*aradhana*), are free from all kinds of attachment to worldly objects and persons and are devoid of infatuation, are (said) to be the *sadhus*

76 All the [aforesaid] contemplations (*bhavana*) constitute enlightened conduct from the *vyavahara* point of view, that (which is known) as enlightened conduct from the *nishchaya* point of view is described in subsequent *gathas*

Chapter V Repentance (*Pratikraman*)

77 I am neither infernal or hellish, nor sub-human, nor human, nor am I in the celestial condition, which are all [non-natural] modifications (*pariyaya*) of the true self, which is neither the doer, nor makes others do, nor their approver

78 I am neither in any of the soul-quests (*margana sthan*), nor I am in any of the stages of spiritual development (*gunasthana*), nor do I belong to any of the soul-classes (*jiva sthan*) I am neither their doer, nor do I make others do them, nor am I their approver

79 I am neither a child, nor old person, nor a youth, nor the cause of any of them I am neither their doer, nor do I make others do them, nor am I their approver

80 I am neither attachment, nor aversion, nor delusion, nor the cause of any of them I am neither their doer, nor do I make others do these, nor am I their approver

81 I am neither anger, nor pride, nor deceit, nor greed I am neither their doer, nor do I make others do them, nor am I their approver

COMMENTARY

In the above *gathas*, Kundakundacharya asks or exhorts the aspirant soul (*sadbhak*) to contemplate that all the non-natural modifications (both of physical forms and impure psychic activities or mental states), do not belong to the intrinsic

nature of self, they arise because of the *karma-upadhi*. In reality, these are not natural or intrinsic to the soul, hence for the attainment of self-realisation, the self should contemplate about its intrinsic, pure nature again and again and about getting rid of the impure thought-activities, which are the result of *karmic upadhi*, since soul is not, in reality, the doer of any one of them. This process of contemplation is known as the practice of self-analysis (*bhed-abbhyasa* or *bhed uyanana*, i.e. the Science of Discriminative Insight) and is considered indispensable for self-realisation.

82 By practising self-analysis, (the soul) becomes equanimous and thus (attains) enlightened conduct. In order to fortify this (conduct), I describe repentance, etc. [self-disciplinary methods]

83 He, who leaving aside (all) forms of speech and getting rid of (impure) psychic dispositions and mental states, such as attachment, etc., meditates upon his own pure soul is said to undergo repentance (*pratikraman*)

84 He, who specifically abstaining from (all sorts of) transgressions, is absorbed in contemplation about the pure self, is said to undergo repentance, because he himself is the embodiment of repentance.

85 He, who abstaining from (all sorts of) unbecoming, unwholesome, sinful conduct, is established firmly in enlightened conduct, is said to have repentance, because he himself is the embodiment of repentance.

86 He, who renouncing the wrong, deluded path, firmly treads on the path of the Conquerors (*Jinas*) (of internal defilements), is said to have repentance because he himself is the embodiment of repentance.

87 A righteous, virtuous, pious person (*sadhu*), who abstaining from all thought-activities that cause emotional agitation, establishes himself in unblemished thought-activity, is said to have repentance, because he himself is the embodiment of repentance.

88 A virtuous man (*sadhu*), who abstaining from thought-activities devoid of self-restraint, is absorbed in the three-fold self-restraint (of mind, body and speech), is said to have

repentance, because he himself is the embodiment of repentance

89. He, who abstains from the mournful and cruel contemplations, and engages himself in righteous and pure contemplations is said to observe repentance according to the aphorisms of the Conquerors (*Jinas*)

90 The mundane soul has experienced deluded view, etc *bhavas* (thought activities), before (since time immemorial), (but) enlightened view (*samyaktva*), etc psychic dispositions or thought-activities have never been experienced by this soul

91 He, who having completely renounced deluded view, wrong or perverted knowledge and unwholesome conduct, contemplates upon enlightened view, knowledge and conduct is (said to observe) repentance

92 (The intrinsic nature of) soul alone is the supreme or the highest objective of human endeavour A virtuous man, established in his pure self, destroys the *karmas*, therefore, only concentration on the true self is the repentance of the highest order

93 A virtuous man, absorbed in concentration on the pure self, eradicates all defects Therefore, only concentration on the intrinsic purity of the self constitutes the repentance of all transgressions

94 He, who having understood the nature of repentance, as described in the scripture known by the name of "*Pratikraman Sutra*," contemplates upon it, is said to observe repentance

Chapter VI

Renunciation (*Pratyakhyān*)

95 He, who having given up all disputations (*jalpa*) of speech and having detached himself from (all) future (thought-activities), auspicious and inauspicious, meditates upon his own true soul, (is said) to observe renunciation

96 A person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates that he is that (*soham*, i.e. "I am that" perfect soul), whose nature is all-knowing, all-intuitive, all powerful and all-blissful

97 An enlightened person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates that he is That (*sobam*), which never gives up its own intrinsic nature and never assumes any aspect of other's nature, but knows and observes all that

98 An enlightened person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates that he is That (*sobam*), which is free from (four aspects of) karmic bondage, viz class or nature (*prakṛti*), duration (*sthiti*), intensity (*anubhaga*) and quantity of karmic particles (*pradesha*), and remains absorbed in that thought-activity only

99 I renounce feeling of "my" and "mine" (*mamatra*) and concentrate on non-attachment, and contemplate that my soul alone is my support, that I distance myself from all other things external and not intrinsic to my nature (An enlightened person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates as such)

100 I experience the essential nature of the soul, i.e consciousness, in my knowledge, intuition and conduct, in renunciation, in stoppage of karma and yoga (the activities of mind, body and speech) (An enlightened person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates as such)

101 The empirical self is killed alone, is born alone, dies alone and alone, becomes self-realized, perfect soul after being liberated from karmas (An enlightened person endowed with immaculate knowledge contemplates as such)

102 My soul is ever one, eternal, and having knowledge and intuition as (its) differentia. All other thought-activities or mental states are external or foreign to me, (because they arise out of soul's) association with other objects or substances

103 Whatever sinful, bad, unwholesome conduct is in me, I give it up with three-fold activity (of body, speech and mind), and absorb myself in equanimity (*samāyaka*) and undifferentiated (*nirakalpa*) consciousness, which is pacified or quietened through breaking free from the net of *vikalpas* (mental vicissitudes and thought constructions)

104 He, who contemplates that by nature he has equalness (*samman*) with all living beings, that he has no enmity or ill feeling towards any of them and that, giving up all desires and

expectations, (is said) to observe supreme equanimity (*samadhi*)

105 He, who is free from passions, has conquered his senses and is brave, i.e. unperturbed in hardships and difficulties, enterprising and afraid of (the sufferings) of the world, (including cycle of birth and rebirth), (is said) to observe renunciation with joy

106 He, who is endowed with discriminative insight and constantly practices it by distinguishing between self and karman, is capable of unwaveringly observing renunciation with certainty

Chapter VII Confession (*Alochana*)

107 He, who meditates upon soul as free from quasi-karmic matter (*no-karma*), and karmas and devoid of attributes and modifications, which are distortions or defilements of the essential nature of the self, (is said) to observe 'confession' (*alochana*)

108 Confession here is said to be of four kinds in the scriptures, (a) confession (*alochana*), (b) eradication (*alunchhana*), (c) non-deformity (*aukrtikarana*), and (d) purity of thoughts (*bharushuddhi*)

109 He, who, having established his thought-activity in equanimity observes his soul, is said to observe confession (*alochana*) Know that this is the teaching of the supreme Conquerors, *Jinendra*

110 Independent and equanimous thought-activity of the essential nature of one's own soul, capable of uprooting the tree of karmas, is said to practise "eradication" (*alunchhana*)

111 He, who contemplates with equanimous *bharus* that his soul is distinct from karmas and an abode of undefiled pure attributes, is known as observing non-deformity (*aukrti karana*)

112 The psychic disposition, which is devoid of lust, pride, deceit, and greed, is purity of thought activities and feelings (*bharushuddhi*) So has been preached to the deserving souls by the seers of the Universe and what is beyond the Universe

Chapter VIII Expiation (*Prayashchitta*)

113 Thought-activities or psychic dispositions pertaining to observance of (five) vows, (five kinds of) carefulness, virtuous character, self-restraint, and the control of senses, is expiation (*prayashchitta*) It should be practised constantly

114 Practice of thought activities pertaining to the eradication of anger, etc one's own (*svakya*) [distorted] psychic dispositions and contemplation on intrinsic and essential attributes of his own self is definitely expiation

115 Truly, one conquers the four kinds of passions thus anger by forgiveness, pride by humility, deceit by straightforwardness, and greed by contentment

116 A virtuous man, who is constantly absorbed in the superb discriminative insight or intuition, enlightened knowledge, and consciousness, (is said to) observe expiation

117 What more need be said! The immaculate practice of all the austerities by great souls is the cause of destruction of numerous karmas, know that to be expiation

118 Clusters of meritorious and demeritorious karmas accumulated (by soul), during its infinite (number of previous) lives, is destroyed by the observance of austerities, so (practising) austerities (is) expiation

119 The self, by concentrating on reliance on the intrinsic nature of the self, is capable of avoiding all (other foreign, impure) thought-activities So concentration on the self is everything (including expiation)

120 He, who abstains from auspicious and inauspicious forms of speech, and being free from (impure) thought-activities, such as attachment, etc , meditates upon his own soul, (is said) to necessarily (*nyamena*) observe *nyam*

121 He, who withdrawing his psychic attention from the body, etc *para dravya* (other substances) and unwaveringly concentrates on the essential nature of consciousness, is said to have relinquished attachment to the body (*kayotsarg*)

COMMENTARY BY UGGAR SAIN JAIN

Passions are the main causes of karmic bondage. As long as a person is even slightly inclined towards any passion, he is sure to commit demeritorious acts. Therefore, it is necessary for him to conquer anger with forgiveness, pride with humility, deceit with straightforwardness and greed with contentment. Having thus subdued the passions, he should meditate upon the intrinsic attributes of his own self and try to realise his intrinsic purity.

Chapter IX

Equanimity (*Samadhi*)

122 He, who giving up the activity of reciting words, meditates on his true self, with the psychic state free from complete attachment (is said to have supreme equanimity (*param samadhi*)).

123 He, who observes self-restraint, *nyam* and austerities, and meditates on his true self through virtuous concentration (*dharma dhyana*) and pure concentration (*shukla dhyana*), (is said) to have supreme equanimity.

124 What is the good of residing in a forest, mortification of the body, observance of various fasts, study of the scriptures, and keeping silence, etc., if a person is devoid of equanimity?

125 He, who is free from all demeritorious and unwholesome (sinful) actions, observes three-fold restraint (of body, mind and speech) and controls his senses, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge.

126 He, who has an equanimous attitude towards all living beings, mobile and immobile, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge.

127 He, who keeps close to his true self during the observance of self-restraint, *nyam*, and austerities, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge.

128 He, who remains free from distorted psychic dispositions of attachment and aversion, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

129 He, who always abstains from mournful (*arta*) and cruel (*raudra*) concentrations (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

130 He, who always renounces meritorious and demeritorious or sinful psychic dispositions, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

131 He, who always renounces scornful laughter, indulgence, sorrow and hatred, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

132 He, who always renounces disgust, fear, sexual-inclinations of all kinds, (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

133 He, who always practises righteous and pure concentrations (is said to have) steadfast equanimity, according to the preaching of those possessing immaculate knowledge

CHAPTER X Enlightened Devotion (*Bhakti*)

134 A *śhrāman* or a layman, who is devoted to enlightened view, enlightened knowledge and enlightened conduct, (is said) to have devotion leading to the path of liberation, without any attachment, desire or expectation of any other kind This has been said by the Conquerors (*Jina*)

135 He, who knowing distinctly the various attributes of the Liberated souls performs reverential devotion towards them, is said to have devotion from *vyavahara* point of view

136 One, who securely establishes himself on the path of liberation and performs devotion without attachment, surely attains the independent attributes of his true self

137 A virtuous person, who uses (the attentiveness and the

faculties or energies of) his consciousness in renouncing attachment, etc. impurities (is said) to be endowed with devotion aimed at uniting his self with the intrinsic nature of his true self. How can he be attached or devoted to other, which is different from his true self?

138 A virtuous person, who, makes use of his consciousness in getting rid of all emotional agitations and having his psyche pacified or quietened through breaking free from the *ukalpas* (mental vicissitudes and thought constructions) (is said) to have devotion uniting his self with the intrinsic nature of his true self. What else can be *yoga* or union except union with one's own supreme soul?

139 One, who having given up indiscriminate clinging to perverse, deluded views, contemplates upon the principles (*tattvas*) enumerated by the Conquerors (*Jina*) realises *yoga* or union with his own intrinsic nature.

140 The greatest Conquerors, Rishabha and others, being thus absorbed in supreme devotion of their own true self, have attained the perfect bliss of liberation, therefore (one) should practise supreme devotion of uniting his self with the intrinsic nature of his true self.

Chapter XI

Essential, Independent, Self-disciplinary Activities (*Avashyakas*)

141 Whatever does not depend upon others, is surely said to be endowed with independent action. This self-reliance in destroying karmas is considered as the path of liberation that unites the empirical self with its own intrinsic nature.

142 One who is not under any external control or influence and does not depend on others is called *avusha*, i.e. independent. Know ye that the act of *avusha* or self-reliant person is called *avushyaka*, independent action. That is the means and the way to attain liberation from the bondage of karmas and material body. This is the implied meaning or derivation (*anuketi*) of the word (*avushyaka*).

143 A self-reliant person (*śraman*) is said to depend on others in case he is engaged in inauspicious thought-activities, unwholesome psychic dispositions or inclinations. Hence, his actions are not considered to have the essential and distinguishing characteristic or the feature of Independent Action (*avashyaka*)

144 One, who is engaged in auspicious thought-activities, he is, in fact, also dependent on other persons or objects, he can also not be considered to have the essential and distinguishing feature of independent action (*avashyaka*)

145 He, who deliberates on substances, their attributes and their modifications, is also considered dependent on others. Thus, has been said by the *śramanas* (self-reliant seekers), who have extinguished the darkness of delusion

146 He, who having given up foreign psychic dispositions meditates on the intrinsic purity of the self, is truly independent or self-reliant. His action alone is said to be independent action

147 If you want to be truly self-reliant and independent, you should firmly and steadfastly establish yourself in the intrinsic nature of soul, through that the quality of equanimity (*samāyaka*) is said to be fully realised

148 A *śraman*, who is devoid of independence (of action and self-reliance), remains deficient in enlightened conduct. Therefore, one should again practice aforesaid independence in proper way

149 A *śraman*, who is self-reliant and practices independent action, is (called) "Interior Self" (*antarātma*), whereas he, who is devoid of independent action, is (known as) "Exterior Self" (*baharatma*)

150 He, who indulges in unnecessary arguments, disputations, wrangling, etc., both in internal thoughts and external speech, is called the Exterior Self, but he, who does not indulge in such wrangling, etc., is said to be the Interior Self

151 He, who is absorbed in virtuous and pure concentrations, is also *antarātma*, while a *śraman*, devoid of such concentration, is to be known as the *baharatma*

152 The *śraman*, who performs *pratīkṣaman* (repentance), etc. self-disciplinary activities, realises *nishchaya chāritra* (conduct from

nishchaya naya) and advances towards conduct completely free from passions and attachment (*vetruga charitra*)

153 Verbal repentance, verbal observance of *pratyakhyana* and *nyam*, verbal confession — all these should be considered as mere recitations from books

154 If you have the capacity to practise repentance, etc self-disciplinary rules, then practise them with (sincerity and) concentration, and if you are not capable of doing it, then you should have firm conviction about the true nature of the self

155 Having well examined repentance (*pratikraman*), etc self-disciplinary practices from the scriptures expounded by the Conquerors (*Jina*) and observing silence, a yogi should always try to realise his own purpose

156 Diverse are the mundane souls and diverse are their karmic and mental make-up, accounting for their different psychic dispositions, their attainments in the field of knowledge, etc also differ considerably One should, therefore, avoid entering into verbal controversies, arguments, debates, wrangling, etc either with one's own co-religionists or with those professing other faiths or holding opposite views

157 Just as a person getting hold of some treasure, experiences or enjoys its fruits in his own native lonely place, similarly an enlightened person, enjoys the treasure of his immaculate knowledge, (leaving aside all unwholesome inclinations and thoughts about other foreign objects and persons)

158 All great souls in the past, by having thus practised self-reliance (*avashyaka* i.e Independent Action) and progressing through the various blemishless and free from laxity stages of spiritual development (*apramatta*), etc, *gunasthan*, have realised immaculate knowledge

Chapter XII

Conscious Attentiveness of the Soul (*Upayoga*)

159 From the *vyaavahara* point of view, the Lord possessing immaculate knowledge (*kevali-bhagavan* or *keval jnan*) perceives and knows all, i.e omniscient (From the *nishchaya* standpoint),

however, the said Lord necessarily perceives and knows his self

160 Know ye, that in *keval jñāna*, both knowledge and intuition exist simultaneously as light and heat exist simultaneously in the sun.

161 (If) one holds or argues that knowledge illuminates other objects, (while) *darshan* (intuition) illuminates only soul, and [hence] the soul illuminates itself and other objects, and

162 (If) knowledge illuminates only other objects, then *darshan* (which is said to illuminate only soul) will be different from knowledge, since it is said (in the previous *gāthā*) that *darshan* does not illuminate other objects

163 (If) soul illuminates (only) other (objects), then *darshan* would be different from the soul, because, it has been said that *darshan* does not illuminate other objects

164 From the *vyaṁbhāra* point of view, (just as) knowledge illuminates other (objects), so does *darshan*. From *vyaṁbhāra* standpoint (just as) soul illuminates other objects, so does *darshan* (also)

165 From *nishchaya* point of view, (just as) knowledge illuminates the the self (only), so does *darshan*. From *nishchaya* standpoint (just as) soul illuminates the self, so does *darshan* (also)

166 (From *nishchaya* point of view), *Kevali bhagavan* perceives the intrinsic nature of the self, but not the Universe. If one argues like that, what is his fault?

167 Consciousness perceives (knows) material and immaterial objects, conscious and non-conscious substances, the self and all (other) directly without (any dependence on or help from) the senses

168 He, who does not perceive all the aforesaid substances, together with their various attributes and modifications, properly and with clarity (is said) to have indirect *darshan*.

169 *Kevali bhagavan* knows the Universe, not (the intrinsic nature of) his soul. If someone argues like that (from the *vyaṁbhāra* point of view), what is his fault?

170 Knowledge is the intrinsic and essential characteristic or nature of the self; therefore, a soul knows its own self. (If knowledge) does not know its own soul, (then) that (knowledge)

will be different from the soul

171 Know ye, that consciousness or soul is knowledge, and knowledge is soul, there is no doubt about it. Therefore, knowledge and *darshan* illuminate the self and other (objects)

172 *Kerali* does not know or perceive intentionally, by voluntary exertion. That is why, he is said to possess immaculate knowledge and hence is said to be free from (karmic) bondage

173 Speech, arising from thought-activity or psychic disposition, (which are modifications of intrinsic nature), is the cause of bondage in a mundane soul, while speech, devoid of any such thought-activity, surely cannot cause any bondage in the *Keral-jnani*

174 Words uttered deliberately, with some intention or desire by the empirical self, is the cause of bondage while unintentional flow of speech, devoid of any volition or desire, definitely does not cause bondage in the *keral jnani*

175 Since the activities of standing, sitting and walking of the *Kerali* are devoid of any volition or desire, they do not cause any (fresh karmic) bondage. The bondage takes place as a result of delusion and when the activity is motivated by a desire for some sensual gratification

176 On the termination of the life-span (*ayus*) karma, all the remaining karmas are also extinguished. Then immediately (the *kerali* thus freed from the karmas) occupies the topmost position in the universe

177 (A perfect soul is) free from birth, old age and death. (It is) pure, supreme and devoid of the eight karmas. It possesses the four-fold attributes of (supreme soul) (i.e. infinite intuition, infinite knowledge, infinite bliss and infinite vigour), (and is) indivisible, indestructible and inexhaustible

178 (A perfect soul is) free from obstructions, supersensuous, unparalleled, and transcends both meritorious and demeritorious karmas. (Again it is) free from the cycle of births and deaths and is eternal, unperturbed and without any support or dependence, i.e. self-sufficient

179 Where there is neither pain, nor pleasure, neither suffering, nor any obstruction, neither death nor birth, there only is *nirvana*

180 Where there are neither senses, nor is there any disturbance or calamity, nor delusion, nor astonishment, nor sleep, nor desire, nor hunger, there only is *nirvana*

181 Where there are neither any karmas, nor quasi-karmas, nor is there any anxiety, nor mournful and cruel concentrations, nor righteous and pure concentrations, there only is *nirvana*

182 There is infinite knowledge, infinite bliss, infinite vigour, infinite intuition, immateriality or formlessness (*amurtatva*), existence (*astutva*), and space points (*pradeshatva*) (in the state of *nirvana*)

183 *Nirvana* is, indeed, the state of *siddha* (liberated soul), and *siddha* means *nirvana*, such has been stated in the scriptures. A soul, free from karmas, occupies the topmost position in the Universe

184 Know ye, that the movements of *jivas* and material objects (can) take place wherever *dharma* can take them. They cannot go further in the absence of *dharma*

185 *Nyam* (the path of Liberation) and the fruit of that *nyam* (i.e. liberation) have been described (by me), on account of devotion for scriptures (*pravachana bhakti*). If there are any inconsistencies (in the description), the scholars should rectify them so as to make the best use of the treatise

186 If any (persons) find fault with this noble path (of liberation), simply because of envy or jealousy, then (O Aspirant), on hearing their words, do not slacken in your devotion to the path of the Conquerors (*Jina*)

187 Having understood the teachings of the Conquerors, I have composed this treatise entitled "*Niyamsara*", for the use of my own contemplation with a view to remove all inconsistencies, misunderstandings and shortcomings, that may be apparent [in earlier works]

श्री कुम्भकुम्भाइरियकदो

णियमसारो

जीवाधिकार

रामिऊरा जिनं वीरं अंगतवरणाणदंसणसहावं ।
बोच्छामि णियमसारं केवलिसुदकेवलीभणिदं ॥१॥

मग्गो मग्गफलं ति य दुविहं जिणसासणे समक्खादं ।
मग्गो मक्खलउवाओ तस्स फलं होइ णिव्वाणं ॥२॥

णियमेण य जं कज्जं तं णियमं णाणदंसणचरित्तं ।
विवरीयपरिहरत्थं भणिदं खलु सारमिदि वयणं ॥३॥

णियमं मोक्खलउवाओ तस्स फलं हवदि परमणिव्वाणं ।
एदेसि तिण्हं पि य पत्तेयपरवणा होइ ॥४॥

अत्तागमतच्चाणं सहहणादो हवेइ सम्मत्तं ।
ववगयअसेसदोसो सयलगुणप्पा हवे अत्तो ॥५॥

छुहत्तण्हभीरुरोसो रागो मोहो चिता जरा रुजा मिच्चू ।
सेदं खेदं मदो रइ विम्हियणिदा जणुव्वेगो ॥६॥

णिस्सेसदोसरहिओ केवलणाणाइपरमविभञ्जुदो ।
सो परमप्पा उच्चइ तव्विवरीओ ण परमप्पा ॥७॥

तस्स मुहुग्गदवयणं पुव्वावरदोसविरहियं सुद्धं ।
आगममिदि परिकहियं तेण दु कहिया हवन्ति तच्चत्था ॥८॥

जीवा पोगलकाया धम्माधम्मा य काल आयासं ।
तच्चत्था इदि भणिदा णाणागुणपञ्जएहि संजुत्ता ॥९॥

जीवो उवओगमओ उवओगो एणणवंसणो होइ ।
 एणणुवओगो दुबिहो सहावणणं विहावणणं ति ॥१०॥
 केवलमिदियरहियं असहायं तं सहावणणं ति ।
 सण्णणिदरविपप्पे विहावणणं हवे दुबिहं ॥११॥
 सण्णणं चउमेयं मदिसुदओही तहेव मणपज्जं ।
 अण्णणं तिवियप्पं मदियाई मेदवो चेव ॥१२॥
 तह वंसणउवओगो ससहावेदरविपप्पदो दुबिहो ।
 केवलमिदियरहियं असहायं तं सहावमिदि भणिदं ॥१३॥
 चक्खुअचक्खुओही तिण्णि वि भणिदं विभावमिदि ति ।
 पज्जाओ दुवियप्पो सपरावेक्खो य णि लेक्खो ॥१४॥
 एणरणयतिरियसुरा पज्जाया ते विभावमिदि भणिदा ।
 कम्मोपाधिविवज्जियपज्जाया ते सहावमिदि भणिदा ॥१५॥
 माणुस्सा दुवियप्पा कम्ममहीभोगभूमिसंजादा ।
 सत्तविहा एणइया एणदब्बा पुढविमेदणे ॥१६॥
 चउदहमेदा भणिदा तेरिच्छा सुरगणा चउदमेदा ।
 एदेति वित्थारं लोयविभागेसु एणदब्बं ॥१७॥
 कत्ता भोत्ता आदा पोगलकम्मस्स होवि ववहारा ।
 कम्मजभावेणादा कत्ता भोत्ता दु णिच्छयदो ॥१८॥
 दब्बत्थिएण जीवा वदिरित्ता पुब्बभणिदपज्जाया ।
 पज्जयणयेण जीवा संजुत्ता होंति दुबिहेहि ॥१९॥

अजीवाधिकार

अणुखंधविपप्येण दु पोगलदत्वं हवेइ दुवियप्पं ।
 खंधा ह दु छप्पयारा परमाणु चेव दुवियप्पो ॥२०॥
 अइथूलथूल थूलं थूलसुहुमं च सुहुमथूलं च ।
 सुहुमं अइसुहुमं इदि घरादियं होदि छम्मेयं ॥२१॥
 भूपव्वदमादीया भणिदा अइथूलथूलमिदि खंधा ।
 थूला इदि विण्णेया सप्पोजलतेल्लमादीया ॥२२॥
 छायातवमादीया थूलेदरखंधमिदि वियाणाहि ।
 सुहुमथूलेदि भणिया खंधा चउरवखविसया य ॥२३॥
 सुहुमा हंवति खंधा पाप्पोगा कम्मवगणस्स पुणो ।
 तव्विवरीया खंधा अइसुहुमा इदि परुवेति ॥२४॥
 धाउच्चउक्कस्स पुणो जं हेऊ कारणं ति तं णेयो ।
 खंधाणं उवसाणं णादव्वो कज्जपरमाणु ॥२५॥
 अत्तादि अत्तमज्झं अत्तं तं णेव इंदियगोउभं ।
 अविभागी जं दव्वं परमाणू तं वियाणाहि ॥२६॥
 एयरसरुवगधं दोफासं तं हवे सहावगुणं ।
 विहावगुणमिदि भणिदं जिणसमये सव्वपयडत्तं ॥२७॥
 अण्णणिरावेवखो जो परिणामो सो सहावपज्जाओ ।
 खंधसरुवेण पुणो परिणामो सो विहावपज्जाओ ॥२८॥
 पोगलदत्वं उच्चइ परमाणू णिच्छएण इदरेण ।
 पोगलदव्वो ति पुणो वव्वेसो होदि खंधस्स ॥२९॥
 गमणणिमित्तं धम्ममधम्मं ठिदिजीवपोगलाणं च ।
 अवगहराणं आयासं जीवादीसव्वदव्वाराणं ॥३०॥

समयावलिभेदेण दु बुबियप्यं ग्रहव होइ तिवियप्यं ।
 तीवो संखेज्जावलिहवसंठाणप्पमाणं तु ॥३१॥
 जीवावु पुग्गसावो रांतगुणा चाबि (भाबि) संपदा समया ।
 लोयायासे संति य परमट्ठो सो हवे कालो ॥३२॥
 जीवावीवव्वाणं परिषट्ठणकारणं हवे कालो ।
 धम्मादिचउप्पहं णं सहावगुणपज्जया होति ॥३३॥
 एवे छट्ठव्वाणि य कालं मोसूण अस्थिकाय त्ति ।
 णिहिट्ठा जिरासयये काया हु बहुप्पवेसत्तं ॥३४॥
 संखेज्जासंखेज्जाणंतपवेसा हवन्ति मुत्तस्स ।
 धम्माधम्मस्स पुणो जीवस्स असंखवेसा हु ॥३५॥
 लोयायासे तावं इवरस्स अणंतयं हवे वेसा ।
 कालस्स ए कायत्तं एयपवेसो हवे जम्हा ॥३६॥
 पोगलदब्बं मुत्तं मुत्तिविरहिया हवन्ति सेसाणि ।
 वेदणभावो जीवो वेदणगुणवज्जिया सेसा ॥३७॥

शुद्धभावाधिकार

जीवादिबहितब्बं हेयमुबावेयसम्परणो अप्पा ।
 कम्मोपाधिसमुग्भवगुणपज्जाएहि वविरित्तो ॥३८॥
 एणो खलु सहावठाणा एणो माणवमाणभावठाणा वा ।
 एणो हरिसभावठाणा एणो जीवस्साहरिस्सठाणा वा ॥३९॥
 एणो ठिदिबंघट्ठाणा पयडिट्ठाणा पवेस ठाणा वा ।
 एणो अणुभागट्ठाणा जीवस्स ए उदयठाणा वा ॥४०॥

एषो लक्ष्यभावठाणा णो लक्ष्यउवसमसहावठाणा वा ।
 ओदइयभावठाणा णो उवसमणे सहावठाणा वा ॥४१॥
 चउगइभवसंभमणं जाइजरामरणरोगसोगा य ।
 कुलओणिजीवमगणठाणा जीवस्स णो संति ॥४२॥
 णिद्वंद्हो णिद्वंद्हो णिम्ममो णिक्कलो गिरालंबो ।
 णीरागो णिद्वंद्हो णिम्मूढो णिम्भयो अप्पा ॥४३॥
 णिगंगथो णीरागो णिस्सल्लो सयलदोसणिम्मूढको ।
 णिक्कामो णिक्कोहो णिम्माणो णिम्मदो अप्पा ॥४४॥
 वण्णरसगंधफासा थीपुंसणंसयादिपज्जाया ।
 संठाणा संहणणा सव्वे जीवस्स णो संति ॥४५॥
 अरसमरुक्कमगंधं अठ्वत्तं चेदणागुणमसद्वं ।
 जाण अलिगगहणं जीवमणिद्विदठसंठाणं ॥४६॥
 जारिसिसा सिद्धप्पा भवमल्लिय जीव तारिसा होंति ।
 जरमरणजम्ममुक्का अट्ठगुणलकिया जेण ॥४७॥
 असरीरा अविणासा अणिदिया णिम्मला विसुद्धप्पा ।
 जह लोयगो सिद्धा तह जीवा संसिदी जेया ॥४८॥
 एदे सव्वे भावा ववहारणयं पडुच्च भणिदा हु ।
 सव्वे सिद्धसहावा सुद्धणया ससिदी जीवा ॥४९॥
 पुव्वुत्तसयलभावा परदव्वं परसहावमिवि हेयं ।
 सगदव्वमुपादेयं अंतरतच्चं हवे अप्पा ॥५०॥
 विवरीयाभिणिवेस विवज्जिय सहहणमेव सम्मत्तं ।
 संसयविमोहविबभमविज्जियं होदि सण्णाणं ॥५१॥
 चलमलिगमगाठत्तविज्जियसहहणमेव सम्मत्तं ।
 अधिगमभावो णाणं हेयोवादेयतच्चाणं ॥५२॥

सम्मतस्स रिमितां जिखसुतां तस्स जाणया पुरिसा ।
 अंतरहेऊ भणिवा वंसणमोहस्स खयपहुदी ॥५३॥
 सम्मतां सण्णाणं बिज्जवि मोक्खस्स होवि सुण चरणं ।
 ववहारणिच्छएण वु तम्हा चरणं पवक्खामि ॥५४॥
 ववहारणयचरितो ववहारणयस्य होवि तवचरणं ।
 णिच्छयणयचारितो तवचरणं होवि णिच्छयदो ॥५५॥

व्यवहारचारित्राधिकार

कुलजोरिणजीवमग्गणठाणाइसु जाणिऊण जीवाणं ।
 तस्सारं भणियत्तणपरिणामो होइ पढमवदं ॥५६॥
 रोगेण व दोसेण व मोहेण व मोसभासपरिणामं ।
 जो पजहवि साहु सया बिदियवदं होइ तस्सेव ॥५७॥
 गामे वा णयरे वाऽरण्णे वा पेच्छिऊण परमत्थं ।
 जो मुयदि गहणभावं तिदियवदं होवि तस्सेव ॥५८॥
 वट्टूण इत्थिरुवं वांछाभावं णियत्तवे तासु ।
 मेहुणसण्णविवज्जियपरिणामो अहव तुरीयवदं ॥५९॥
 सव्वेत्तिं गंथाणं तागो रिणनेक्खभाणापुब्बं ।
 पंचमवदमिदि भणिवं चारित्तभरं बहंतस्स ॥६०॥
 पासुगमग्गेण विवा अवसोगंतो जुगप्पमाणं हि ।
 गच्छइ पुरदो समणो इरियासमिदी हवे तस्स ॥६१॥
 पेसुण्णहासकक्कसपरिणदप्पम्पसंसियं वयणं ।
 परिचत्ता सपरहिदं भासासमिदी वंदतस्स ॥६२॥

कदकारिदाणुमोदणरहिबं तह पासुगं पसत्थं च ।
 दिण्णं परेण भत्तं समभुत्ती एसणासमिदी ॥६३॥
 पोत्थइकमंडलाइं गहणविसग्गेसु पयत्तपरिणामो ।
 आदावणणिक्खेवणसमिदी होदि त्ति णिदिट्ठा ॥६४॥
 पासुगभूमिपदेसे गूढे रहिए परोपरोहेण ।
 उच्चारविच्चागो पइट्ठासमिदी हवे तस्स ॥६५॥
 कालुस्समोहसण्णारागदोसाइअसुह भावाणं ।
 परिहारो मणुगुत्तो ववहारणयेण परिकहियं ॥६६॥
 थोराजचोरभत्तकहादिवयणस्स पावहेउस्स ।
 परिहारो वयगुत्तो अलियादिणियत्तिवयणं वा ॥६७॥
 बंधणछेदणमारणआकुंचण तह पसारणादीया ।
 कायकिरियाणियत्ती णिदिट्ठा कायगुत्ति त्ति ॥६८॥
 जा रायादिणियत्ती मणस्स जाणीहि तं मणोगुत्ती ।
 अलियादिणियत्ति वा मोणं वा होई बडिगुत्ती ॥६९॥
 कायकिरियाणियत्ती काउस्सग्गो सरीरणे गुत्ती ।
 हिंसाइणियत्ती वा सरीरणगुत्ति त्ति णिदिट्ठा ॥७०॥
 घणघाइकम्मरहिया केवलणाणाइपरमगुणसहिया ।
 चोत्तिस्सअदिसयजुत्ता अरिहता एरिसा होत्ति ॥७१॥
 रादुट्ठकम्मबंधा अट्ठमहागुणसमणिया परमा ।
 लोयगगठिदा णिच्चा सिद्धा ते एरिसा होत्ति ॥७२॥
 पंचाचारसमग्गा पंचिदियदंतिदप्पणिह्लणा ।
 धोरा गुणगंभीरा आयरिया एरिया होत्ति ॥७३॥
 रयणत्तय संजुत्ता जिणकहियपयत्थदेसया सूरा ।
 णिक्कंखभावसहिया उवज्झाया एरिसा होत्ति ॥७४॥

वावारबिप्पमुक्का चउब्बिहा राहणासंयारत्ता ।
 णिगंगांथा णिम्मोहा साहूदे एरिसा होत्ति ॥७५॥
 एरिसयभावणाए ववहारणयस्स होदि चारित्तं ।
 णिच्छयणयस्स ५.रणं उड्ढं पवक्खामि ॥७६॥

परमार्थप्रतिक्रमणाधिकार

णादं णारयभावो तिरियत्थो मणुवदेवपज्जाओ ।
 कत्ता ए हि कारइदा अणुमंता रोव कत्तीणं ॥७७॥
 णाहं मग्गणठाणो णाहं गुणठाण जीवठाणो ए ।
 कत्ता ए हि कारइदा अणुमंता रोव कत्तीणं ॥७८॥
 णाहं बालो बुड्ढो ण चेव तरुणो ए कारणं तेसिं ।
 कत्ता ए हि कारइदा अणुमंता रोव कत्तीणं ॥७९॥
 णाह रागो दोसो ए चेव मोहो ए कारणं तेसिं ।
 कत्ता ए हि कारइदा अणुमंता रोव कत्तीणं ॥८०॥
 णाहं कोहो माणो ण चेव माया ए होमि लोहो हं ।
 कत्ता ए हि कारइदा अणुमंता रोव कत्तीणं ॥८१॥
 एरिसभेवग्गभासे मज्झत्थो होदि तेण चारित्तं ।
 तं दिढकरणणिमित्तं पडिक्कमणादी पवक्खामि ॥८२॥
 मोत्तूण वयणरणं रागादीभाववारणं किच्चा ।
 अप्पणं जो भायदि तस्स दु होदो त्ति पडिक्कमणं ॥८३॥
 आराहणाइ वट्टइ मोत्तूण विराहणं विसेसेण ।
 सो पडिक्कमणं उच्चइ पडिक्कमणमओ हुवे जग्गहा ॥८४॥

मोत्तूण अस्मायारं आयारे जो दु कुणदि थिरभावं ।
 सो पडिकमणं उच्चइ पडिकमणमग्रो हवे जम्हा ॥८५॥
 उम्मगं परिचत्ता जिणमगं जो दु कुणदि थिरभावं ।
 सो पडिकमणं उच्चइ पडिकमणमग्रो हवे जम्हा ॥८६॥
 मोत्तूण सल्लभावं णिस्सल्ले जो दु साहु परिणमदि ।
 सो पडिकमणं उच्चइ पडिकमणमग्रो हवे जम्हा ॥८७॥
 चत्ता अगुत्तिभावं तिगुत्तिगुत्तो हवेइ जो साहु ।
 सो पडिकमणं उच्चइ पडिकमणमग्रो हवे जम्हा ॥८८॥
 मोत्तूण अट्टरुदं भाणं जो भादि धम्मसुक्कं वा ।
 सो पडिकमणं उच्चइ जिणवरणिदिट्ठसुत्तेसु ॥८९॥
 मिच्छत्तपहुदिभावा पुब्बं जीवेण भाविया सुइरं ।
 सम्मत्तपहुदिभावा अभाविया होति जीवेण ॥९०॥
 मिच्छादंसणणाणचरित्तं चइऊण णिरवसेसेण ।
 सम्मत्तणाणचरणं जो भावइ सो पडिकमणं ॥९१॥
 उत्तमअट्ठं आदा तम्हि ठिदा हणदि मुणिवरा कम्मं ।
 तम्हा दु भाणमेव हि उत्तमअट्ठस्स पठिकमणं ॥९२॥
 भाणणिस्सीणो साहु परिचागं कुणइ सव्वदोसाणं ।
 तम्हा दु भाणमेव हि सव्वविचारस्स पडिकमणं ॥९३॥
 पडिकमणणामध्ये सुत्ते जह वणिजं पडिकमणं ।
 तह णच्चा जो भावइ तस्स तदा होदि पडिकमणं ॥९४॥

निश्चयप्रत्याख्यानधिकार

मोत्तूण सयलजप्पमरागयसुहृमसुहवारणं किञ्चा ।
 अप्पाणं जो भायदि पच्चक्खाणं हवे तस्स ॥६५॥
 केवलणानसहाबो केवलदंसरासहावसुहमइओ ।
 केवलसत्तिसहाबो सो हं इदि चितए राणी ॥६६॥
 गियभावं रावि मुच्चइ परभावं रोव येणए केइ ।
 जाणदि पस्सदि सव्वं सो हं इदि चितए णाणी ॥६७॥
 पयडिट्ठिदि अणुभागप्पदेसबंधेहि वज्जिदो अप्पा ।
 सो हं इदि चितिज्जो तत्थेव य कुणदि थिरभावं ॥६८॥
 ममत्ति परिवज्जामि रिम्ममत्तिमुवट्ठिदो ।
 आलंवणं च मे आदा अवसेसं च वोसरे ॥६९॥
 आदा खु मज्झ गाणे आदा मे दंसणे खरित्ते य ।
 आदा पच्चक्खाणे आदा मे संवरे जोगे ॥१००॥
 एगो य मरदि जीवो एगो य जीवदि सयं ।
 एगस्स जादि मरण एगो सिज्झदि षीरओ ॥१०१॥
 एगो मे सासदो अप्पा राणदंसराणलक्खणो ।
 सेसा मे दाहिरा भावा सट्ठे संजोगलक्खणा ॥१०२॥
 जं किञ्चि मे दुच्चरित्तं सव्वं तिबिहेण वोसरे ।
 सामाइयं तु तिबिहं करेमि सट्ठं गिरायारं ॥१०३॥
 सम्मं मे सव्वमूदेसु वेरं मज्झं ण केणवि ।
 आसाए वोसरित्ता णं समाहि पडिवज्जए ॥१०४॥
 णिक्कसायस्स दंतस्स सूरस्स ववसायिणो ।
 संसारभयभीदस्स पच्चक्खाणं सुहं हवे ॥१०५॥

एवं भेदभासं जो कुब्बइ जीवकम्मणो निच्चं ।
पच्चक्खणं सक्कदि धरिदुं सो संजवो नियमा ॥१०६॥

परमालोचनाधिकार

णोकम्मकम्मरहियं विहावगुणपज्जएहिं वदिरित्तं ।
अप्पाणं जो भायदि समणस्सालोयणं होदि ॥१०७॥
आलोयणमालुंछण वियडीकरणं च भावसुद्धी य ।
चउविहमिह परिकहियं आलोयणलक्खणं समये ॥१०८॥
जो पस्सदि अप्पाणं समभावे संठवित्तु परिणामं ।
आलोयणमिदि जाणह परमजिणिदस्स उवएसं ॥१०९॥
कम्ममहोरुहमूलच्छेदसमत्थो सकीयपरिणामो ।
ताहीणो समभावो आलुंछणमिदि समुद्दिट्ठं ॥११०॥
कम्मादो अप्पाणं भिण्णं भावेइ विमलगुणणिलयं ।
मज्झत्थभावणाए वियडीकरणं त्ति विण्णेयं ॥१११॥
मदमाणमायलोहविवज्जियभावो दु भावसुद्धि त्ति ।
परिकहियं भव्वाणं लोयालोयप्पदरसीहिं ॥११२॥

शुद्धनिश्चयप्रायश्चित्ताधिकार

वदसमिदिसीलसंजमपरिणामो करणणिग्गहो भावो ।
सो हवदि पायच्छित्तं अणवरयं चैव कायव्वो ॥११३॥
कोहादिसगढभावक्खयपहुदिभावणाए णिग्गहण ।
पायच्छित्तं भणिदं णियगुणाचित्ता य णिच्छयदो ॥११४॥

कोहं क्षमया माणं समहवेणज्जवेण मायं च ।
 संतोसेण य सोहं जयदि खु ए चउविहकसाए ॥११५॥
 उविकट्ठो जो बोहो एणं तस्सेव अप्पणोचितं ।
 जो धरइ मुणी रिणच्चं पायच्छित्तं हवे तस्स ॥११६॥
 किं बहुणा भणिएण दु वरतववरणं महेसिरां सव्वं ।
 पायच्छित्तं जाणह अणेयकम्माण लयहेऊ ॥११७॥
 णंताणंतभवेण समज्जियसुहअसुहकम्ससंबोहो ।
 तववरणेण विणस्सदि पायच्छित्तं तवं तम्हा ॥११८॥
 अप्पसरुवालंबरणभावेण दु सव्वभावपरिहारं ।
 सक्कदि काडुं जीवो तम्हा भाणं हवे सव्वं ॥११९॥
 सुहअसुहवयरयणं रायावीभावधारणं किञ्चा ।
 अप्पाणं जो भायदि तस्स दु रिणयमं हवे रिणयमा ॥१२०॥
 कायाईपरवव्वे थिरभावं परिहरत्तु अप्पाणं ।
 तस्स हवे तणुसणं जो भायइ णिव्वियप्पेण ॥१२१॥

— — —

परमसमाध्यधिकार

वयणोच्चारणकिरियं परिचत्ता वीयरायभावेण ।
 जो भायदि अप्पाणं परमसमाही हवे तस्स ॥१२२॥
 संजमरिणयमतवेण दु धम्मज्झाणेण सुक्कभाणेण ।
 जो भायइ अप्पाणं परमसमाही हवे तस्स ॥१२३॥
 किं काहदि बणवासो कायकिलेसो विचित्तउववासो ।
 अज्झयणमोणपट्टदी समबारहियस्स समणस्स ॥१२४॥

बिरदो सब्बसावज्जे त्तिगुत्तो पिहिदिबिओ ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१२५॥
 जो समो सब्बभूवेसु थावरेसु तसेसु वा ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१२६॥
 जस्स संण्हिदो अप्पा संजमे गियमे तवे ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१२७॥
 जस्स रागो दु दोसो दु विगाडि ण जाणेइ दु ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१२८॥
 जो दु अट्ठं च रुद्धं च भाणं वज्जेदि गिण्णसो ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१२९॥
 जो दु पुण्णं च पावं च भावं वज्जेदि गिण्णसो ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१३०॥
 जो दु हस्सं रई सोगं करदि वज्जेदि गिण्णसो ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१३१॥
 जो दुग्गं छा भयं वेदं सब्बं वज्जेदि गिण्णसो ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१३२॥
 जो दु धम्मं च सुक्कं च भाणं भाएदि गिण्णसो ।
 तस्स सामाइगं ठाइ इदि केवलिसासणे ॥१३३॥



परमभक्त्यधिकार

सम्मत्तणाणचरणे जो भत्ति कुणइ सावगो समणो ।
 तस्स दु गिण्णुदिभत्ती होवि त्ति जिणेहि पण्णतं ॥१३४॥
 भोक्खंगयपुरिसाणं गुणमेवं जाणिऊण तैसि पि ।
 जो कुणदि परमभत्ति ववहारणयेण परिकहियं ॥१३५॥

मोक्षपहे अण्णाणं ठविऊणं य कुरावि रिण्वुदी भत्ती ।
 तेणं दु जीवो पावइ असहायगुणं रिण्वण्णाणं ॥१३६॥
 रायावीपरिहारे अण्णाणं जो दु जुंजदे साह ।
 सो जोगभत्तिजुत्तो इदरस्स य किह हवे जोगो ॥१३७॥
 सब्बविअण्णाभावे अण्णाणं जो दु जुंजदे साह ।
 सो जोगभत्तिजुत्तो इदरस्स य किह हवे जोगो ॥१३८॥
 विवरीयाभिरिवेसं परिचत्ता जोण्हकहियतण्वेसु ।
 जो जुंजदि अण्णाणं रिण्वभावो सो हवे जोगो ॥१३९॥
 उसहादिजिणवरिदा एवं काऊण जोगवरभत्ति ।
 रिण्वुविसुहमावण्णा तम्हा धरु जोगवरभत्ति ॥१४०॥

निश्चयपरमावश्यकधिकार

जो एण हवदि अण्णावसो तस्स दु कम्मं भणंति आयासं ।
 कम्मविणासणजोगो रिण्वुविमग्गो त्ति पिज्जुत्तो ॥१४१॥
 एण वसो अवसो अवसस्स कम्म वावस्सयं त्ति बोद्धव्वा ।
 जुत्ति त्ति उवाअं त्ति य रिण्ववयवो होदि रिण्वुत्ती ॥१४२॥
 वट्टदि जो सो समरणो अण्णावसो होदि असुहभावेण ।
 तम्हा तस्स दु कम्मं आवस्सयलक्खणं एण हवे ॥१४३॥
 जो चरदि संजदो खलु सुहभावे सो हवेइ अण्णावसो ।
 तम्हा तस्स दु कम्मं आवस्सयलक्खणं एण हवे ॥१४४॥
 दव्वगुणपज्जयाणं चित्तं जो कुराइ सो वि अण्णावसो ।
 मोहं धयारववगयसमणा कहयंति एरिसयं ॥१४५॥
 परिचत्ता परभावं अण्णाणं भावि रिण्मलसहावं ।
 अण्णवसो सो होदि हु तस्स हु कम्मं भणंति आयासं ॥१४६॥

आवासं जह इच्छसि अप्सहावेसु कुर्यादि धिरभावं ।
 तेण दु सामण्यगुणं संपुण्यं होवि जीवस्स ॥१४७॥
 आवासएण हीणो पग्भट्टो होवि चरणदो समणो ।
 पुब्बुत्तकमेण पुणो तम्हा आवासयं कुज्जा ॥१४८॥
 आवासएण जुत्तो समणो सो होवि अंतरंगप्पा ।
 आवासयपरिहीणो समणो सो होवि बहिरप्पा ॥१४९॥
 अंतरबाहिरजप्पे ओ बट्टइ सो हवेइ बहिरप्पा ।
 जप्पेसु ओ न बट्टइ सो उच्चइ अंतरंगप्पा ॥१५०॥
 जो धम्मसुक्कभाणम्मि परिणदो सो वि अंतरंगप्पा ।
 भाणविहीणो समणो बहिरप्पा इति विजाणीहि ॥१५१॥
 पडिकमणपट्टविकिरियं कुब्बंतो रिणच्छयस्स चारित्तं ।
 तेण दु विरागवरिए समणो अग्भुट्टिदो होवि ॥१५२॥
 वयणमयं पडिकमणं वयणमयं पच्चक्खाराण रिणयमं च ।
 आलोयण वयणमयं तं सव्वं जाण सज्जायं ॥१५३॥
 जदिसक्कदि कादुं जे पडिकमणादि करेज्ज भाणमयं ।
 सत्तिविहीणो जा जइ सद्वहरणं चेव कायव्वं ॥१५४॥
 जिणकहियपरमसुत्ते पडिकमणादिय परोक्खऊण फुडं ।
 मोणव्वएण जोई रिणयकज्जं साहये रिणच्चं ॥१५५॥
 णाणा जीवा णाणा कम्मं णाणाविहं हवे लद्धी ।
 तम्हा वयणविवादं सगपरसमएहि वज्जिज्जो ॥१५६॥
 लद्धूण रिणिह एक्को तस्स फल अणुहवेइ सुजणत्ते ।
 तह णाणी णाणरिणिह भुंजेइ चइत्तु परतत्ति ॥१५७॥
 सव्वे पुराणपुरिसा एवं आवासयं च काऊण ।
 अपमत्तपट्टविठाणं पडिवज्ज य केवली जादा ॥१५८॥

शुद्धोपयोगाधिकार

जाणदि पस्सवि सव्वं ववहारणयेण केवली भगवं ।
 केवलणाणी जाणदि पस्सवि णियमेण अप्पाणं ॥१५६॥
 जुगवं वट्टइ णाणं केवलणाणिस्स दंसणं च तहा ।
 दिणयरपयासतावं जह वट्टइ तह मुणेयव्वं ॥१६०॥
 णाणं परप्पयासं दिट्ठि अप्पप्पयासया चेव ।
 अप्पा सपरपयासो होवि त्ति हि मण्णसे जदि हि ॥१६१॥
 णाणं परप्पयासं तइया णाणेण दंसणं भिण्णं ।
 ण हवदि परदव्वगयं दंसणमिदि वणिणदं तम्हा ॥१६२॥
 अप्पा परप्पयासो तइया अप्पेण दंसणं भिण्णं ।
 ण हवदि परदव्वगयं दंसणमिदि वणिणदं तम्हा ॥१६३॥
 णाणं परप्पयासं ववहारणयेण दंसणं तम्हा ।
 अप्पा परप्पयासो ववहारणयेण दंसणं तम्हा ॥१६४॥
 णाणं अप्पपयासं णिच्छयणयएण दंसणं तम्हा ।
 अप्पा अप्पपयासो णिच्छयणयएण दंसणं तम्हा ॥१६५॥
 अप्पसरूव पेच्छदि लोयालोयं ण केवली भगवं ।
 जइ कोइ भणइ एवं तस्स य कि दूसणं होइ ॥१६६॥
 मुत्तममुत्तं वव्वं चेयणमियरं सणं च सव्वं च ।
 पेच्छंतस्स दु णाणं पच्चलमणिदियं होइ ॥१६७॥
 पुव्वुत्तसयलदव्वं णाणागुणपज्जएण संजुत्तं ।
 जो ण य पेच्छइ सम्मं परोक्खदिट्ठो हवे तस्स ॥१६८॥
 लोयालोयं जाणइ अप्पाणं रोव केवली भगवं ।
 जइ कोइ भणइ एवं तस्स य कि दूसणं होई ॥१६९॥

एणं जीवसरूढं तम्हा जाणेइ अप्पणं अप्पा ।
 अप्पाणं ए वि जाणवि अप्पादो होदि वदिरिस्सं ॥१७०॥
 अप्पाणं विण्णु एणं एणं विण्णु अप्पणो ए संदेहो ।
 तम्हा सपरपयासं एणं तह दंसणं होदि ॥१७१॥
 जाणंतो पस्संतो ईहापुब्बं ए होइ केवलिणो ।
 केवलणणी तम्हा तेण दु सोऽबंधगो भणिदो १७२॥
 परिणामपुब्बवयणं जीवस्स य बंधकारणं होइ ।
 परिणामरहियवयणं तम्हा णाणिस्स ए हि बंधो ॥१७३॥
 ईहापुब्बं वयणं जीवस्स य बंधकारणं होइ ।
 ईहारहियं वयणं तम्हा एणिस्स ए हि बंधो ॥१७४॥
 ठाणणिसेज्जविहारा ईहापुब्ब ए होइ केवलिणो ।
 तम्हा ए होइ बंधो साक्खट्ठं मोहणीयस्स ॥१७५॥
 आउस्स सयेण पुणो णिण्णासो होइ सेसपयडीणं ।
 पच्छा पावइ सिग्घ लोयग्ग समयमेत्तेण ॥१७६॥
 जाइजरमरणरहियं परमं कम्मट्ठवज्जियं सुद्धं ।
 एणं।इचउसहावं अक्खयमविणासमच्छेयं ॥१७७॥
 अब्बाबाह्मणिदियमणोवमं पुण्णपावणिम्मुककं ।
 पुण्णरागमणविरहियं णिच्छ अचलं अणालबं ॥१७८॥
 णवि दुक्ख एवि सुक्खं एवि पीडा एव विज्जदे बाधा ।
 एवि मरणं एवि जरणं तत्थेव य होइ णिव्वाणं ॥१७९॥
 एवि इंदिय उवसग्गा णवि मोहो विम्बिहो ए णिहा य ।
 ए य तिण्हा एव छुहा तत्थेव य होइ णिव्वाणं ॥१८०॥
 एवि कम्मं णोकम्मं एवि चिता एव अट्ठरुदाणि ।
 एवि धम्मसुक्कभाणे तत्थेव य होइ णिव्वं ए ॥१८१॥

विज्जदि केवलणाणं केवलसोक्खं च केवलं विरियं ।
 केवलविट्ठि अमुत्तं अत्थित्तं सप्पदेसत्तां ॥१८२॥
 णिव्वाणमेव सिद्धा सिद्धा णिव्वाणमिदि समुद्दिट्ठा ।
 कम्मविमुक्को अप्पा गच्छइ लोयगपज्जंतं ॥१८३॥
 जीवाण पुग्गलाणं गमणं जाणेहि जाव धम्मत्थो ।
 धम्मत्थिकायभावे तत्तो परदो ए गच्छन्ति ॥१८४॥
 णियमं णियमस्स कलं णिहिट्ठं पवयणस्स भत्तीए ।
 पुब्बावरविरोधो जदि अवणीय पूरणंतु समयण्हा ॥१८५॥
 ईसाभावेण पुणो केई णिदंति सुंदरं मगं ।
 तेसि वयणं सोच्चाभत्ति मा कुणह जिणमग्गे ॥१८६॥
 णियभावणाणिमित्तं मए कदं णियमसारणामसुदं ।
 णच्चा जिणोवदेसं पुब्बावरदोसणिमुक्कं ॥१८७॥

॥ इति णियमसारो ॥



Index of *Niyamsara* Gathas cited in Introduction

(Figures in Bold indicate *gatha* numbers, others denote page numbers)

2	128	42	141
3	7, 18	44	48
4	7-8	47	48
5	8-9, 52-54	48	48
6	9, 97	49	17, 28, 33, 46, 48, 53
7	9, 97	50	19, 46-47
10	11, 18, 52	51	18, 52, 54-55, 126
11	8, 11, 18, 52, 103	52	52, 55
12	11-12, 18, 52, 54, 103	53	53, 59
13	11-12, 18, 52	54	28
14	11-12, 14, 18, 34, 52	55	28, 52, 69, 107
15	18, 141	56	57
16	141	58	59
17	141	59	59
18	17, 28, 33	60	59
19	35	61	60
29	28	62	61
38	33, 36-37, 40-41, 44-46	63	61
40	45	64	61
41	45	65	61

66. 28, 62	124. 76, 88
67 62	125 76, 88-89
68. 62-63	126. 76, 88-89
69 62	127. 88-89
70. 63	128 75, 88-89
71. 47, 64-65	129. 88-89
72 64-65	130. 88-89
73 64-65	131. 75, 88-89
74 64-65	132. 75, 88-89
75 64, 66	133 88-89
76 28, 57, 66	134 89
80. 76	135 28, 90, 94
81. 76, 85	137 75, 90
82 75-76	138. 90
89 76	139. 75-76, 90
90 8, 76	140. 96
91 8, 75-76	141. 95-96
96 47	143 95-96
97 47, 75-76, 79	144 95-96
98 47	145 95
99 75, 77	147 76, 96
100 76	148 96
102 84	149 5, 96-97
103 79	150 5, 97
104 75-76, 84	151. 97
105 76, 84	152 28, 93, 97
106 75	153 94
107 75, 85	154 97
109 85	155 90
110. 76, 85	156 4
111. 76, 85	158 28, 97
112 75-76, 85	159 65, 100
113 86	160 103
114 75, 86	162 99
115 75, 85-86	163 28, 99
117. 86	164. 28, 99
118 86	165 99
119. 86	166. 100
120. 7, 75, 86	167. 102
121. 75, 87	169. 100
122 88	170. 98, 100
123 88	171. 99
	187 7, 104, 107

Index of *Samayasara* Gathas cited in Introduction

(Figures in Bold indicate *gatha* numbers, others denote page numbers)

7	51, 84	230	122
13	40-41	284	43
14	48	306	43
49	48	307	43
142	15	408	93, 134
144	15	409	93, 134
146	107	410	93, 134
147	107	411	134
154	107	413	135

Index

- abhyasa*, 155
abhyudaya, 106
achaleshu darshan, 12, 160
acharya, 65, 136, 140, 155, 171
acharya, 170
adana nishchayana samata, 61, 170
adharma, 27, 154, 159, 164-165
adhyatma, 169
adhyatma(s), 5, 36
adhyatma chetana, 87
adhyatma shastra, 107
adhyatmani, 24
Advaita Vedanta, 110, 115, 119-120
Advaita-ekana, 110
agadha, 169
agam, 9-10, 53, 154
aghatu, 65
aham brahmasmi, 49, 80, 120
ahankara, 37, 72, 87, 113-116, 119, 123, 142
ahanka, 167
ahimsa, 57-58, 60, 72, 121, 145, 169
agra, 9, 26, 38-41, 116, 162
agnana, 11-12, 56, 114
Akalanka, 110
akasha, 154
akula, 38
Allah, 81
alochana, 6, 85, 94, 106, 155-156, 176
alpa jnana, 114, and salvation, 114
alimbhana, 84, 176
Amrtachandra, 5-6, 32, 40, 43, 54, 57, 101, 107, 143
amrtatva, 185
ananta chatushtaya, 3, 47, 79, 103
anekani, 19, 28, 81-83, 105, 113
anger, 87
anishana, 69
anish, 80
anishatma, 5, 96, 181

- antar tadichham (antas tattvam)*, 19, 42, 47, 103, 169
arabhaṣa, 80, 166, 175
arapreksha, 6
aravṛata, 71, 136
aravṛata aradana, 136
araya rishab, 95
apangraha, 59
aparnam, 99, 111
aparyapta, 161, 167
apeksha, 160
 Apollo 11, 129
appa, 169
appa deva bhava, 117
appa so paramappa, 117
apramatta, 182
aprasasta, 46
apramatnaman, 43-44
apta, 9, 154
apta agam tattvanam smaddhanam, 9, 53
aradhana, 172
arhanas, 2, 64-65
arhat, 9, 131, 155, 171
arhanas, 64-65
 Armstrong, Neil, 129
ara-dhyana, 76, 89, 179
asahya, 11-12
asakti, 59, 87, 116
 Ashtanga yoga, 67
Aṣṭa Pāṇḍa, 4
ashubha, 8, 39-40, 46-47, 62, 70, 72, 107, 170-171
ashubha parnam, 142
ashuddha, 73
asava, 38, 56
astikaya, 36, 154
astirva, 185
asub, 62
atikraman, 92
atishayas, 65, 171
atma, 17, 25-26, 36-38, 40, 42, 44, 50-51, 80, 113, 116, 118-120, 127
atma-ashrta, 54
atma eva brahman, 119
atmagna, 64, 100-101, 146
atma kaarya, 143
atmakhyat, 41
atmanah atma, 46
atma sukhava, 76
atmanu, 123
 Atreya, B.L., 139
audayika bhava, 42, 45, 166
aupashamika bhava, 42, 45, 166
avach darsan, 12, 160
avach mana, 12, 160
avali, 164
avamandya, 69
avaraṇa, 23, 27, 38-40
avastha karmma avastham, 155
avastha, 96, 180
avasthyaka(s), 6, 94-97, 105, 155-156, 180-182
 as dhamma, 95-96
 characteristic of, 95
avastha, 99
avasthavana, 85, 176
avasthena, 108
 axiological *nayas*, 33
 see ethico-spiritual *nayas*
baba, 36-42
bahmatma, 97, 181
bahya, 36, 39-40
bandha, 38-40, 56
banas anukakha, 4, 6
Bhagavad Gita, 5
 see also *Gita*
bhakti, 6, 50, 113, 118, 123, 179-180
bhakti marg, 112-113, 125
bhasha samiti, 60, 136, 170
 Bhatt, B.D., 28, 30
 Bhattacharya, Hari Mohan, 99
bhava(s) (psychic dispositions), 6, 8, 12, 17-18, 21-22, 27-28, 33, 38-

- 39, 42, 45-47, 57, 59, 62, 73,
75-76, 83, 90, 107, 162, 166,
168, 174
kinds of, see *ashubha*, *shubha*,
shuddha
see also *jna bhavus*
bhava asrava, 39, 45
bhava bandha, 56
bhava karma, 13-15, 23-24, 33, 35-36,
45, 49, 73-75, 126, 160
bhava manas, 29
bhava purya, 45
bhavana(s) (contemplations), 57, 59,
64, 66-67, 93, 129, 172
their role and significance in self-
transformation, 93-94
Bhavaupahada, 156
bhava prana, 58
bhava shuddhi, 76, 84, 176
bhavyatva, 167
bhaya karma ushja, 21
bhed abhyasa, 75-76, 173
bheda vyavahara, 87, 155, 173
bhokta, 17, 27, 33, 35, 37, 72-73, 83,
161-162
bhutartha, 44
brahmacharya, 170
brahman (Brahman), 3, 49, 80-81, 119-
120
brahmasma, 80, 120
Bṛhadaranyaka Upanishad, 120-121
buddhi, 98
Buddhism, 111, 117

Chakravarti, A., 41, 43, 98, 127, 138
chakshu darshan, 12, 160
chala, 169
charitra, 7-8, 51-52, 64, 66-67, 73, 75,
84
charitra achara, 66
charitra nrhanaya, 114
cheda, 80
chetan, 17, 21
chetan karma, 74
chetana, 47
three kinds of, 8
jnana chetana, 8
karma chetana, 8
karmaphala chetana, 8
chetana-shakti, 12
chetayuta, 80
consciousness
attributes of, 22-23

dana, 122
darshan, 7-8, 12, 18, 27, 47, 51-52, 75,
84, 99, 103-104, 106, 155, 160,
167, 183-184

darshan achara, 65
darshan-jnana pradhanat, 124
darshan-moha, 53
darshan-mohanaya, 114
darshan-upayoga, 11-12, 18, 159-160
and Libet's experiment, 103
as readiness potential, 103
Darshanavara, 2
dattha, 80
see also *drashta*
daya dana, 145
deha ashrita, 54
deva puja, 70
Devasena, 2
Dhaky, M.A., 138
dharma, 20, 27, 76, 79, 83, 95, 107, 118,
124, 145-147, 154, 159, 164-165,
185
dharma dhyana, 178
dharmaik, 131, 146
dhyana, 86, 88
Digambara Jain, 1-2, 71, 134, 138-
141
dosha, 23, 27, 35
drashta, 3, 79-80

- drashita bhava*, 79
drashitavata, 124
dravya, 12-13, 15, 19, 22, 26-27, 33, 39, 45, 74, 81, 83
dravya asrava, 39, 45
dravya bandh, 56
dravya karma, 14-15, 23-24, 33-36, 42, 74-75, 126, 160
dravya linga, 135
dravya manas, 29
dravya prana, 58
dravya piga, 66
dravya purva, 45
Dravya Sangraha, 17, 52, 70, 72, 74
dravyarthika nayas, 29-30, 34-36, 83, 115, 162
 Dundas, Paul, 131-133
dushta, 54, 58, 85, 95, 115-116

 Einstein, Albert, 116
ekanta uchi, 139-140
 emotional intelligence (E I), 73
 enlightened knowledge, 54-56, 160
 enlightened vision, 154
E pignaphia Carnatica, 2
 equanimity, 88
eshana samuti, 61, 170
 ethico-spiritual *nyas* (viewpoints), 27-33
 complementarity of different *nyas*, 104-106
 confusion regarding, 32-33
 see also *nyas*

 Father, 81

galati, 163
 Gandhar (Kandhar), 3
Gandhara, see Gautam
 Gandhi, Mahatma, 92
ganthamam, 59
 Gardner, Howard, 73

gati, 166-167
 Gautam, *Gandhara*, 1, 139
ghatia, 19, 64-65
 Gier, Nicholas F., 120
Gita (Bhagavad Gita), 85, 117-119, 123
 God, 25, 81-82, 115
 Godhood, 4, 10, 15, 50, 82-84, 98, 129, 134
gotra, 65
grabhya, 105
granthi, 59, 77, 167
 Greece, 3
 greed, 87
 Greene, Robert, 86
guna(s), 19-20, 81, 123
guna dosha, 88
 Gunakriti, 3
guna paryayas, 45
gunaparyayasuddhayanam, 81
gunasthanas, 70, 172, 182
gunavratas, 70
gupti (self-restraint), 31, 52, 57, 61 65, 68, 70-71, 121, 131, 135 137, 144, 155
 from *nishchaya* and *vijrahana nyas*, 61-64
 three kinds of
 body, 62-63
 mind, 61 62
 speech, 62-63
gunapati, 70

 happiness, 106-107
 Haribhadra, 106
Harmless Souls, 131
hetu, 62
heya, 28, 36-39, 41-42, 44, 55, 70, 168
 and *upadeya*, 36-39
 Hillel, 119
himsa, 57, 59
 Hinduism, 50
hita kam, 61

Hollinshead, 78

ichha parinama, 59
indriya, 167
irya samut, 136, 170
Isruana pravadhana, 7

Jaffe, Dennis, T, 66, 93
 Jain, Uggar Sain, 157-158, 161, 164-165, 167, 169, 179

Jaini, J.L., 135
 Jainism, 50-51, 106, 108, 146, 158
jape, 174
japa, 69-70
Jayasc na, 2, 4-5, 32, 43
Jiva(s), 9, 116, 171, 173-174 179-180, 182

Jinendra, 176
Jurhasara, 128
jut atmanah, 118
juendriya, 76
jva(s), 9-12, 17, 19-21, 26-27, 29 34, 36-42, 44, 53, 75, 80, 102, 112, 116, 154, 159, 165-166, 185
jva bhavas, 15, 40, 42
 kinds of, 42-43
 see *audayika*, *aupashamika*, *kshayika*, *kshayopashamika* and *parinamaika bhavas*

Jva Samasa, 141, 166
jva sthara, 172
jvutma, 80
jvara, 8, 18, 27, 47, 50-52, 75, 84, 99, 103-104, 106, 114, 123, 155, 167
jvara achara, 65
jvara chetana, 8
jvara marg, 49-50, 112-115, 125
jvara upayoga, 11-12, 18, 159
jvata, 3, 79-80
jvayuk bhava, 15, 40
jvaya, 114
 Johnson, WJ, 94, 131, 138

Johnston, E H, 138

Kabir, 61
kala, 12, 154
kala ana, 164
kamandala, 170
 Kandhar, 3
 Kanji Svamu, 140-141
karana, see *namita karana* and *upadana karana*
karana paramanu, 162-163
karana paramatma, 83
Karananuyoga, 141
karma, 84, 111, 123
 Jaina theory of, 25-26
 kinds of, 13-14
 role of thoughts, 24-25
 see also *bhava* and *dhruva karma*

karma chetana, 8
karma marg, 49-50, 112, 115 117, 125
karmaphala chetana, 8
karma phalashu, 122-123, 128
karma pudgala, 23
karma upadhi, 14, 33, 36, 40, 42, 45-46, 90, 105, 160, 166, 168
karma yoga, 115, 118, 121 123
karta, 16-17, 27, 33, 35, 37, 72, 83, 161-162

Kartakeyanupreksha, 146
karana, 65
karya paramatma, 83, 163
kashaya, 23, 86, 167
kashaya mukti, 95
kashaya mukti keil mukti eva, 95
kaya, 167
kaya gati, 63, 171
kaya klesha, 70, 88, 143
kayotsarg, 63, 87-88, 94, 106, 155-156, 171, 177
keval jnana, 11, 103
keval jnana, 182, 184
kevali, 103, 157-158, 185

- kevalabhagavan*, 182-183
 Kotturan, George, 120
 Krishna, 81
kṛtā-kṛtā anurūdāna, 61
kṛtya kārta, 145
kṣhamikarūda, 111
kṣhaya, 45
kṣhayaka bhava, 42, 45, 166
kṣhayopashamika bhava, 42, 45, 166
kṣhetra, 12
kṣhobha, 38, 46, 118
kula, 166
 Kundakunda, Acharya, 1-9, 11, 14, 18,
 24, 26-27, 29-33, 35-37, 40-41,
 46, 50, 52, 54-55, 57, 60-63,
 66-67, 69-71, 75, 84, 86-91, 93-
 97, 99-101, 104, 106-107, 116,
 118, 121 124, 126-128, 130-
 134, 136, 138-147, 155, 157
 appreciation of, 1-4,
 balance between excessive
 formalisation and excessive
 interiorisation, 131-135
 date of, 138-139
 influence of mother, 3-4
 misunderstandings regarding,
 130-131
 original thinker, 142-144
 other names of, 2
 replacement by Pushpadanta, 139-
 141
 travel to Videha *kṣhetra*, 2
 works, 4-5
Kural, 4
kṛasastha, 112

lakṣhaṇa, 145
Lakṣmī Stotra, 6
leshya, 167
 Libet, Benjamin, 103
 limitation of wants, 57
lunga, 49

loka, 155
Lokamogya, 156
Loka ubhaya, 141, 161
loya ubhagesu, 156
 Lucknow, 139

madhyasitha, 65, 75, 105
 Mahaprajna, Acharya, 2
 Mahavira, 1-3, 139, 143, 157
maha vrata, 71, 136
maithana sangha, 170
matra, 65, 121
mul, 169
mula, 69 70
mamakar, 114-116
mamata, 37, 48, 72, 79, 87, 113, 116,
 118, 135, 142, 175
mamata bhava, 72
manah-paryaya jnana, 12, 160
mano-grpta, 61 62, 171
 Mansell, Frank, 84
Marashtra region, 2
margana, 141, 166-167
margana sthan, 172
mathas, 140
mati jnana, 11, 160
michhami dukkadam, 93
mishra maharaja, 53
mula, 61
mūhya darshan, 75, 114
mūhya jnana, 114
mūhya darshan-jnana chantram, 8
mūhyatva, 52, 56
 modifications (*paryaya*)
 natural, 12
 non-natural, 12, 15, 18-22
moha, 56, 114, 116-118, 123
mohaneya, 114
moksha, 8, 38-40, 42-43, 50, 56, 80,
 114, 124, 128
moksha marg, 8-9, 49-51, 126-128
Moksha marg Prakashak, 55

- moksha sara*, 128
moksha-shastra, 128
moolgaras, 71
moolyatmak, 28
 moral discipline, 135-137
 two categories, 135-137
madua, 65
 Mukhtar, Pandit Jugalkishor, 138
Mulachara, 94, 156
Mula Sangha, 1
namukeshus, 145-146
naara, 2
naaraha, 59
naaratra, 36
 Murty, K. S., 109-112

nada, 80
navatmyaruda, 111
navi padarthas, 39
navi tattva, 39
naya(s), ethico-spiritual or axiological
 nayas, 28-36
 kinds of, 16, 28-32
 relationship with *tathyatmaka*
 nayas, 29-30, 34-36
 see also *nashchaya*, *shuddha* and
 vyavahara nayas
nayas, *tathyatmaka*, 29-31, 33-36
 kinds of, 29-30
 see also *dravyarthika* and
 parayarthika nayas
 Nietzsche, 32
naib-kankshita, 79, 122, 128,
naib-shankit, 128
naib-bhava, 76
naib-bhavana namuta, 104
namuta, 13-17, 46, 54, 73
namuta karana, 13-14, 16, 34, 41, 116
naibankana, 123
naikana upayoga, 20
naikandhu, 123
naigantika, 65

nargara Brahman, 120
nargara, 38-40, 42-43, 56, 68, 70, 146
namana, 123
namaha, 66
narpeksha, 13-15, 35, 42, 59, 160
narakta, 180
narupadhi, 42
naruna, 158, 184-185
naruda, 145
narukalpa, 175
narukalpa upayoga, 84
narukara ditta, 86
naruta, 62-63, 89-90, 94, 155
nashchaya, 6, 51, 54, 100, 105
nashchaya bandha, 74
nashchaya dhantra, , 31, 39, 52, 71-74,
 78, 83, 93-97, 107, 121, 134,
 136, 140, 145-146, 181
 and *vyavahara dhantra*, necessity of
 both, 71-74
 relevance for householders, 137-
 138
nashchaya naya, 13, 16-17, 26, 28-30,
 32-35, 42, 52-53, 55, 60-64, 68-69,
 71, 73-75, 94, 99-101, 104-105,
 108, 115, 137, 155, 161, 164, 169,
 172, 181, 183
nashchaya samayak darshan, 54
nashchaya samayak jnana, 55-56
nashkama karma, 123
nashkenya, 42
nayam, 7-8, 19, 88-89, 94, 108, 127-128,
 158, 177-178, 185
 concept of, 7-8
nayamena, 7-8, 126, 154, 177
Nyamaana, 4-7, 11, 14, 26-28, 30-31,
 33-34, 48, 52, 67, 71, 75, 80,
 86, 95, 100, 103-105, 107-108,
 121, 126, 128, 130-131, 136-
 139, 141, 143, 145, 147, 154-
 155, 157-158, 185
 clarifies various *nayas*, 33-36

- commentary on, 5-6
 critical remarks on, 155-156
 misunderstandings regarding, 130-138
no-karma, 85, 176
no-kashaya, 89
 non-stealing, 57
 non-violence, 57, 104
 omniscience, 102
 Ornish, Dean, 72
 Padmaprabhadēva, Maladhārdeva, 5-6, 32, 57, 107, 154, 156
pakṣhatukānta, 15
pañcha parameshthi (five most revered souls), 64-69
 see also *parameshthi*
Panchastikaya, 2, 4, 6, 26, 31-32, 143
pañcāstikāyas, 165
papa, 39, 62, 74, 75, 89, 110, 122
para, 13, 15, 17, 62, 78, 142, 161
para-apekṣha, 14, 16-17
para āśmīa (parāśmīa), 16, 54, 100, 161
para bhava, 19, 68, 75, 96, 122
para dāruṇa (para dāruṇa), 19, 33, 35, 37, 47, 72, 73, 75, 87, 122, 168, 177
para nāmā, 144
para nāda, 61
para saharuṇa, 168
para samaya, 128
para saubhāva, 19, 47
param bhakti, 89-94, 156
param samādhi, 88-89, 106, 155
paramāra, 26, 162-165
paramārtha, 6, 28, 51
paramārtha kala, 164
paramārtha-satya, 135
paramatma, 3-4, 7, 9, 43, 47, 50, 66, 80, 82-84, 90, 97-98, 105, 116, 118-119, 127, 159
paramatma sūtrapa, 108
parameshthi, 66
 see also *pañcha parameshthi*
paṅgaha, 48, 59
paṅgaha tyaḡa, 59, 170
pañhara, 61
parāma, 12, 18-19, 57, 59, 61, 74, 99, 112, 118
parāmarā, 27, 74
parāmarāśheel, 19
parāma, 11, 19, 26, 82-83, 99, 112
parāmarāśa bhava, 42, 45
parāma, 18
parāmarā naya, 6, 28
Parishrutnāth Stotra, 6
 Parthasarathi, A., 117
pariyāpa, 167
pariyāya(s), 12, 15, 19, 34, 36, 81, 83, 160, 162, 172
 dāruṇa pariyāya, 45
 gūṇa pariyāya, 45
pariyāyārthika naya, 29-30, 34-35, 83, 162
 Patanjali, 67
Patanjali Yoga, 7
 paths to salvation, 108, 112-117
 bhakti mārg, 113
 jñāna mārg, 113-114
 karma mārg, 115-117, 121-123
 Persia, 3
pradeśha, 80, 166, 175
pradeśharu, 185
 Prakrit, 4, 8, 32-33, 80
prakṛti, 80, 166, 175
pramud yuktā chāritra, 142
pramod, 65
prāna, 36, 38, 58
prānāna, 66
prāśhara, 145
prāśhastā, 46
prātikramāna, 6, 31, 39, 43-44, 52, 65, 68, 71, 75-79, 92-94, 96-97, 104, 106-107, 128-129, 134, 136-138,

- 141, 147, 155-156, 172-173, 182
Pratikramanasutra, 156
pratamas, 136
pratishtapani samiti, 61, 170
pratyakhyati, 6, 43, 79-80, 93-94, 106, 137, 141, 155-156, 174-176, 182
pravachana bhakti, 185
Pravachanasana, 2, 5-6, 12, 31 32, 54, 57, 74, 100, 102, 106-107, 130, 138, 143
pratyashchitta, 6, 43, 86-87, 94-95, 106, 155, 177-178
 Prem, Nathuram, 138
 pride, 87
praja, 61
pragala, 10, 12-15, 17, 19, 21, 26, 33, 36 39, 72, 74, 159, 161 163
pragala dvaita karma, 28
pragala karmas, 17
praja, 145
praja, 39-40, 89, 110, 122
Pravachana Sadhyapaya, 122
 Pushpadanta, 139
 Pushpadanta Sagar, Acharya, 139-140
 Pythagoras, 63
raga, 54, 58, 85, 95, 115-116, 167
ragas, 123
 Rajchandra, Shrimad, 146
Ramayana, 25, 97
rasapantiyaga, 70
 Rashdall, Hastings, 126
ratna traya, 9, 65
ratna, 89, 179
ratna-dhyana, 76
Rayanasa, 4
 readiness potential (RP), 103
 right (enlightened) conduct, 155
 right (enlightened) knowledge, 154
ripa, 119
ruchi, 120
rupa, 59
sadhak, 97, 172
sadhana, 87
sadhana, 127-128
sadhya, 128, 155, 172-173
saga-darshan, 169
sahaj mana, 103
sahaja nana, 11
sakal pratyaksha, 102-103
sakata upayoga, 29
sakshi bhava, 79
 Salk, Jonas, 72
 Salovey, Peter, 73
 salvation
 Buddhist conception, 111
 different conceptions of, 109-112
 Jaina concept of, 111-112
 meaning of, 109
 path to, 50-52, 108
 Samkhya and Advaita Vedanta concept, 110-111
 validity of separate paths, 123-129
 various paths of, 108, 112-117
sama, 89, 118
samabharu, 61, 89
samadhi, 44, 176, 178-179
samata, 89
samaya, 164
Samayasara, 4-6, 28, 30-32, 40-41, 43-44, 46, 51, 80, 84, 104, 122, 128, 130-131, 134-135, 139, 143
samyaka, 88-89, 94, 118, 155-156, 175, 181
Samyaka Path, 93
samiti, 31, 43, 52, 57, 60-61, 65, 68-71, 73, 86, 121, 131, 135-137, 144, 155
 five kinds of, 60-61
 Samkhya, 110-111, 114
 and Advaita Vedanta, 110-111
 Samkhya yoga, 98-99
sammam, 175

- sammattam*, 8
samsara, 42, 112, 127
samsara-jvas, 103
samsara, 38-40, 42-43, 56, 68, 70, 146
samudra, 145
samyak, 8, 56
samyak charitra, 8, 11, 31-32, 51, 67, 71, 97, 108, 113, 124-128, 145-46, 169
 see also *nishchaya* and *vyavahara charitra*
samyak darshan, 8-10, 21, 32, 38, 50-54, 56, 124
 nishchaya and *vyavahara* kinds of, 54
samyakdrashti, 122
samyak jnana, 8, 11-12, 32, 51-52, 55-56, 67, 71, 108, 124-128, 169
 nishchaya and *vyavahara* kinds of, 54-56
samyak madyatra, 53
samyaktra, 8-11, 18, 52-53, 125, 145, 159, 167, 174
 definition, 9
samyaktra jnana-dharmam, 8
samyaktra-karma, 53
samyam, 77, 86, 88, 167
samyakta, 34
sargna, 61
sargnara, 8, 18
sargratra, 167
sargutta, 34
Sarvato-bhava, 156
sarvasarva, 8
 see also *sargnara*
sarvaya, 126, 169
sarvash, 6
saryoga, 15, 84
sapatraprasam, 99
sapatradam (sui-para hitam), 60
sapeksha, 99
sarva dharmesha, 122
sarva ghatin, 20
sarugna, 64
sarugna, 100-104
 as *armyana*, 100-101
 concept of, 100-104
 from *nishchaya* and *vyavahara nayas*, 100-102
sarva-naya paksha nibho, 15
sat, 19
satkaryadrshiti, 111
sattru, 123
 Saurabh Sagar, Muni, 139
 Schubring, 138
 Scott, C.D., 66, 93
 Self
 as friend and foe, 117-119
 impurities of, 27
 intrinsic purity of, 106-108
 three kinds, 96-97
 self and matter
 evolution nature of, 12-13
 interaction between, 13
 self-discipline (*pratikanaman*, etc. methods), 73, 92
 their significance in self-reformation, 91-93
 Self-reformation, 141-142
 self-reliance, 97-98, 108
 and independence, 97-98
 self-restraint, 73
 sex fidelity, 57
shabja, 167
 Shankara, 144
 Shantala, 3
Shatkhanda-gam, 140-141
shaucha, 7
 Shaurseni Prakrit, 4
sheel, 86
sheetalata, 107
shuksharvatas, 70
 Shiva, 81
shraddha, 10-11, 54, 128, 158

- and *ushrusa*, 10
 meaning of, 10
śmaddha, 97
śmaddhanam, 10
śmanan, 89, 130-131, 135, 179, 181
śmaruk, 89
śmarukachara granthas, 136
śmṛa māna, 12, 160
śmṛa kevalas, 157
śmṛa pañchara, 141
śukha, 7, 39-40, 46-47, 70, 72, 107, 131
śuddha, 6, 17, 28, 84, 103, 116
śuddha atma, 116
śuddha bhava(s), 17, 36, 47, 166-169
śuddha jnyāya, 84
śuddha naya, 13-17, 28-33, 35-37, 42, 45, 47-49, 103, 105, 115, 168
 benefits and significance of laying emphasis on, 47-50
śuddha upayoga, 98-100
 nerukalpa, 43
śuddhachara, 49
śukela, 76
śukela dhyaṇa, 178
śukela māna, 146
 Shvetāmbara, 1, 71, 138
śiddha(s), 3, 9, 17, 28, 33, 43, 48, 53, 65, 97, 154-155, 171, 185
 Siddhasena, 156
śāndhu, 26, 162
 Sogan, K. C., 29
soham, 47, 79-85, 174-175
 soul, 22
 as knowledge, 99-100
 conditioning of, 22
śhita, 80, 166, 175
śūta, 66, 90, 94, 156
śū-ādhyāyana, 7
 supreme Self, 82
Sūtra pāṇḍa, 6
sūtras, 143
śūa, 13
śūa ādhyāyana, 7
śūa ashṛita (śūashṛita), 16-17, 51, 100, 161
śūa-ashṛita narpaksha, 51
śūa atma anubhūta, 15
śūabhava, 11-14, 18-20, 22, 29, 33, 47, 79, 82, 88, 104-105
śūabhava apaksha, 14
śūabhava darshan, 12, 160
śūabhava māna, 11, 160
śūabhava paryaya, 160, 163
śūabhava, 106
śūādhyāyana, 7, 94-95
śūa dhyaṇa, 47
śūka, 15-16
śūka dhyaṇa, 19, 47, 169
śūkya, 177
śūkya bhava, 86
śūkya śuddha atma, 46
 Svami-Kumar, 146
śūanṛta, 143
śūa para apaksha, 12-15, 34
 and non-natural modifications, 13-14
 concept of, 14-17
 meaning, 13-14
śūa para haṇḍa, 70
śūa para prakasha, 101
śūanṛpa, 20, 88
śūanṛpa pratyaksha, 103
śūa samaya, 128

īadibhavaṇṇayam nityam, 20
 Tagore, Rabindranath, 143
 Talmud, 119
īamas, 123
īapa, 7, 69, 86, 88, 131, 143, 146
īapa-achara, 65
īapas chaman, 52, 69-70
īathyatmaka, 29-30
īathyatmaka nayas, 30, 33

- kinds of, 33-36
dharmarthika, 33-36
pariyarthika, 33-36
 see also *nayas*
- Tatia, Nathmal, 23, 98
- Tattvarya* *utti*, 6, 30
- tattva* *dharm*, 146
- tattvanam*, 9
- tattvārtha*, 10
- tattvārthas*, 26-27, 159
- Tattvārtha* *Sūtra*, 8, 70
- tattvas*, 3, 9-10, 37-38, 41, 53-56, 154, 159, 169
 why considered *bāhi* and *heyu*?, 39
 45
- Ten Bhaktis*, 4
- Terapanth, 71
- terpantha*, 161
- Todarmal, Pandit, 5, 146
- tri ratna*, 126, 128
- Truharkara*, 2, 9-10, 157
- trudh jna*, 97
- truthfulness, 57
- Tulsi, Acharya, 71
- Tulsidas, 25, 97
- udambana*, 136
- Universe, 102, 108
- upadana*, 15-16
- upadana* *karana*, 13-14, 16, 34, 54, 116
- upadeya*, 28, 36-39, 42, 44, 47, 55, 169
- upadhi*, 41, 166, 173
- upadhyaya*, 65, 155, 172
- Upadhye, A.N., 1, 5-6, 25, 94, 101-102, 138, 154-156
- Upanishadic monism, 121
- Upanishads, 80, 120
- upasaka*, 135
- upayoga*, 6, 11-12, 19, 63, 87, 96, 103, 100, 107, 132, 182-185
 definition, 20
 kinds of, 11-12
manakana and *sarkana* *upayoga*, 20
 see also *darshan upayoga* and *mana upayoga*
- uchan uruda*, 4
- uchana* *gupta*, 62-63, 137, 171
- undana*, 90, 94, 156
- ustu-sulthana*, 95
- ustu-sumpa*, 88
- veda* (sex inclination), 167
- vedanya*, 65
- Vedanta, 109-111, 119
 and love of others, 119-121
- Vedantin, 82
- Vedas, 97
- vetraga bhava*, 84, 88
- vetraga dhantra*, 43, 97, 182
- vesha*, 49
- vibha*, 88
- vibhava*, 11-16, 18-20, 29, 35, 40, 46, 68, 74-75, 82, 86-87
- vibhava* *darshan*, 160
- vibhava* *gana*, 75
- vibhava* *mana*, 11, 159
- vibhava* *parinama*, 14, 26-27
- vibhava* *parinat*, 19, 21, 29, 47
- vibhava* *pariya*, 15, 20, 160, 164
- vibhama*, 126, 169
- Videha *kshetra*, 12
- vidhan*, 145
- viewpoints, see *nayas*
- vikalpa*, 84, 175
- vikata*, 40, 89
- vinaha*, 55-56, 126, 169
- upareet abhinavsha*, 52-54, 75, 125
- upareet parihana*, 18
- urva* *achana*, 65
- ushaya*, 97
- Visheshavashyuka bhashya*, 156
- Vishnu, 81
- ushuddhi*, 145

- ushrasa*, 10
utraga, 84
uzuksha, 55
vrakshasayyasa, 70
vrata(s) (vows), 31, 39, 43, 57-60, 67-69, 71, 135-137, 144, 155
 five vows, 57-60
vrata, 74
vruttiparsankhyana, 69
vyaruhara, 26, 28, 51-52, 54, 57, 100, 105, 146, 155, 168
vyaruhara bandha, 74
vyaruhara dharma, 31, 39, 52, 56-57, 60, 66-73, 75, 78, 83, 104, 106-107, 121, 132, 134, 136-137, 140, 142, 144-146, 169-172
 and *nishchaya dharma*, necessity of both, 71-74
 as *tapas dharma*, 69-70
 its uniqueness, 70-71
vyaruhara naya, 13-14, 16-17, 27-28, 30, 32-35, 42-43, 52-53, 55, 57, 60-64, 66-72, 75, 90, 94-95, 99-100, 102, 104-105, 108, 161, 164, 169, 171-172, 179, 182-183
vyaruhara samyak-darshan, 54
vyaruhara samyaktva, 54
vedic chaurang, 50
yama, 67
yathartha, 10, 88
yoga, 90, 167, 180
yoga bhakti, 89-90, 94, 155
Yagrusishtha, 139
yona, 166

Fundamentals of Jainism

JAGDISH PRASAD JAIN 'SADHAK'

This book examines the basic principles of Jain religion and philosophy and evaluates their relevance in the contemporary world

This volume traces the antiquity of Jainism from literary and archaeological sources. It discusses the principles of Jain ethics and highlights the role of *samjyak darshan* (enlightened view) in life, *anekanta* (Jain relativism, which synthesizes divergent views) in thought, *syadvad* (faultless method of expression) in speech, *ahimsa* (non-violence) in conduct and *aparigraha* (limitation of wants and possessions) in society

The study examines the nature of the soul (consciousness), the characteristics of embodied self, the evolvent nature of *dravya* (substance), the doctrine of *karma* and explains how the spiritual soul interacts with the physical body. The author argues that the Jain concept of Absolute (the state of undifferentiated consciousness which transcends the conditioned state of the self), is more realistic than the two extremes of Advaita Vedanta and Buddhism.

This authentic and systematic compendium of the essence of Jainism will be useful to scholars and students of Indian philosophy, especially Jainism.

The Enlightened Vision of the Self Svarupa Sambodhana of Bhatta Akalanka Deva

DEVENDRA KUMAR GOYAL

The *Enlightened Vision of the Self Svarupa Sambodhana* of Bhatta Akalanka Deva, an original thinker and a brilliant logician, highlights the intrinsic or essential nature (*svarupa*) of the self. It outlines the path to realize our "real self" by exhorting (*sambodhana*) man to establish himself in his natural state of peace and happiness.

Based on a wide variety of sources, the book discusses the fundamental question "Who Am I?" It examines how Buddhism and Jainism as well as various schools of thought including the materialists, Samkhya and Vedanta perceive the nature of the self. The study answers a number of basic questions: What is the nature and characteristics or aspects of consciousness or soul? Does the soul exist or not? Is it substantial or functional? Is it evolvent (ever-changing) or changeless? Is the soul immanent in beings or a transcendental entity?

The book also critically examines the concepts of Being and Becoming, *aham brahmasmi* (I am brahman), *tat tvamasi* (Thou art That), *soham* (I am That or He), "intentional consciousness" and 'pure consciousness,' the self as knower (*jnata*), observer (*drashta*), etc.

The book will be useful to scholars and students of Indian philosophy especially Jainism.

DEVENDRA KUMAR GOYAL is a Civil Engineer by profession. He is an Honours graduate in Civil Engineering from the Thomason College of Civil Engineering, Roorkee and a Fellow of the American Society of Civil Engineers and the Institution of Engineers (India). He has widely travelled and has work experience in many countries. He has published *Jin Stotra Nikaya* (1997), a translation of nine Sanskrit stotras, and *The Path to Enlightenment. Suryabindu Stotra* by Samantabhadra (2000).

